

MUNPIA

명망

위

세계

심송 현대 판타지 소설

전지적 독자시점

Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint

– 전지적 독자 시점 –

- Volume 2 -

**-Author-
Sing-Shong**

[Rainbow Turtle Translations]

Chapter 27

Landlord (1)

We followed Lee Jihye and entered Chungmuro. Yoo Sangah saw the shattered screen door of the platform and said.

“...It is a chaotic atmosphere.”

As they climbed up from the tracks of railway line 3, they saw some people sitting down.

[You have entered Chungmuro.]

[The third scenario is currently in progress.]

[#GIR-8761 channel is active.]

[#BIR-3642 channel is active.]

From Chungmuro onwards, the size of the scenario grew and the dokkaebi channels increased. From now on, that naive Bihyung would have a hard time.

Some middle-aged people saw us and waved their hands.

“Oh, little samurai. You brought new people?”

“Yes.”

A samurai. I guess Lee Jihye could be called that if the sponsor behind her wasn't known. Sooner or later, they would be punished. Lee Jihye frowned at the middle-aged people.

“Are you drunk again?”

“Hahahat! What is there to do other than drink when the world has become like this?”

The middle-aged people seemed relaxed, unlike those who were experiencing a disaster. It was natural since they were wearing the uniform of soldiers. It was definitely different from Gumho Station.

Now was the true beginning.

“But did your friends come through the tunnel? How great... won’t they have a lot of coins?”

Then one of the middle-aged men turned to Yoo Sangah.

“Young lady over there, what is your name? Would you like to rent a room for cheap?”

“...Room?”

“Haha, you don’t know the system here yet? This place—”

Lee Jihye cut off the middle-aged man’s words.

“Ajusshis. Don’t try to trick the newcomers.”

“Uhuh, they must know anyway. This is what everyone is doing to live...”

“If you don’t want to be injured then get lost.”

The middle-aged man paled at Lee Jihye’s words.

“This... young children have already learned something bad to eat.”

“Hey, Kang-ssi. Stop it.”

The middle-aged people turned away. They disappeared into transit line 4 and Lee Jihye put away her sword.

“I brought you here so take care from now on. I’m not a babysitter.”

This child was speaking so indifferently.

I looked around. Chungmuro. This was the stage of the third scenario, where completely different rules were in play.

“S-Shit! I’ll kill you if you come close...”

A man was in the middle of the platform for subway line 3, waving a knife around and

threatening people.

At this feet was a tile that was 1 pyeong (3.306 m²) in size, emitting a green light that stretched into the air. Yoo Sangah asked, "...Why is he doing that?"

"I don't know."

I could guess but there was no need to scare her just now. There were many people sitting down with a knife on subway line 3. Unlike the previous middle-aged men, their faces were filled with despair. I glanced at them and asked Lee Jihye.

"Is Yoo Jonghyuk here?"

Lee Jihye, who was about to leave, turned her head at 'Yoo Jonghyuk.' There was vigilance in her eyes.

"...Who are you?"

Yoo Jonghyuk had already ruined this child.

Well, I could understand. It was difficult to find a constellation on the level of Maritime War God, even if he searched through all of South Korea. If I was in Yoo Jonghyuk's position, I would've found her soon after coming to Chungmuro.

"I am a companion of Yoo Jonghyuk who came back alive."

"...Companion? How is that possible?"

Lee Jihye stared at me with suspicious eyes. I shrugged shamelessly.

"That guy will understand if you tell him. Where is Yoo Jonghyuk now?"

"...Master isn't here right now."

"Really? This is difficult. I have something I need to say."

Lee Jihye's expression distorted as she stared at me with something like betrayal.

Ah, I knew very well what she thought of Yoo Jonghyuk. Moreover, it was already Master... it will be difficult to gain her this way.

Lee Jihye called out to a boy squatting in the corner.

“Hey, over there!”

“Eh? Yes, yes!”

“Watch over these people right here! I’m going to find Master.”

The boy looked at us with puzzled eyes.

“...Who are they?”

“I don’t know. Master’s friends?”

At Lee Jihye’s words, the eyes of the people on the platform became bigger. They looked at us with amazement and awe.

“...Yoo Jonghyuk-ssi’s friends?”

The boy ran up to us and exclaimed. It was a boy who looked roughly around Lee Jihye’s age.

“Are you really Yoo Jonghyuk-ssi’s friends?”

I couldn’t lie when I saw the boy’s clear eyes. At least, if I was an ordinary person.

“He is a good friend.”

Recently, I didn’t seem to be an ‘ordinary’ person. At least, it was the case here.



While taking care of the unconscious Jung Heewon, I heard about Chungmuro from the boy. Along with Lee Jihye, this boy was one of Yoo Jonghyuk’s followers.

“...Thus, we followed Yoo Jonghyuk-ssi. Are you listening to me?”

“Yes.”

Of course, I wasn’t listening properly. The story of psychopath Yoo Jonghyuk’s heroism

wasn't interesting.

The short summary was something like this.

"Three days ago, Yoo Jonghyuk appeared and saved some of you, including Lee Jihye, from the monsters. Isn't that the story?"

The boy frowned at his story be summarized so simply.

"Uh, the story isn't that simple..."

He was surely spellbound by Yoo Jonghyuk.

Suddenly, a presence with overwhelming force rescued them. It would be strange if they didn't follow him.

But the boy didn't know. The boy survived not because Yoo Jonghyuk was a good guy, but because the boy was luckily with Lee Jihye.

"Now can I ask you a few things I am curious about?"

Lee Hyunsung started asking politely while I was locked in my thoughts.

"Yes. Just ask."

"How is the food supply here?"

"That, it is a bit embarrassing to say... some people, including me, are dependent on Jihye. Jihye hunts and asks Yoo Jonghyuk-ssi to cook..."

It was unknown when he made a checklist but Lee Hyunsung took out his notes and started to write something. He really was a soldier.

"Then how is your drinking water?"

"We give food or coins to the 'Landlord Alliance' upstairs in exchange."

"...Landlord Alliance?"

I sat straight up. Now the story was becoming interesting. The boy hesitantly opened

his mouth.

“They are the landlords in charge of the Chungmuro area. They occupy the upper floors and we call them the Landlord Alliance.”

Chungmuro’s Landlord Alliance. It was a name that appeared in Ways of Survival.

“What type of people are they?”

“Well, what should I say...”

In fact, there was no need for me to ask. Perhaps, according to my expectations, one of the ‘10 Evils’ was in Chungmuro right now.

“They are just landlords.”

This answer was the correct answer in a sense. They were landlords. Building owners who received fixed taxes. At this moment, the quiet Lee Gilyoung opened his mouth.

“Excuse me Hyung.”

“Yes?”

“I want to go to the toilet.”

“Is it urgent?”

“Yes.”

The timing was a bit unexpected. It was even more puzzling because Lee Gilyoung normally didn’t say something like this. Then I noticed that Lee Gilyoung was standing next to a blushing Yoo Sangah.

“...Excuse me, can I also go with you?”

At the moment, the image of Yoo Sangah and Jung Heewon securing secret necessities at Yaksu Station came to mind. I thought I knew what was going on. That kid Lee Gilyoung, he quickly noticed it first.

The boy overhead the conversation and said.

“You need to go up to the second underground floor for the toilet, but it won’t be easy to enter.”

“...Has something happened?”

“Yes. I think it is better to see directly... I’m going up to, would you like to go with me?”

“Let’s go.”

I was the one who said it. Of course, it wasn’t to go to the bathroom. I had to go up and check a few things.

Recently, Yoo Jonghyuk’s movements were different from the ‘third regression’ that I knew. If so, I needed to be clear about the gap.

I went up to the third underground level with my friends, carrying Jung Heewon who was still unconscious.

“Oh, I heard that there were new faces. Have you come to see the rooms?”

A middle-aged man standing near the escalator for line 4 whistled. The boy shook his head and replied.

“Ah, I’m sorry. We are going upstairs...”

“Eh, too bad. Be careful.”

The middle-aged man waved his hands without hesitation. Yoo Sangah watched the middle-aged man moving away and asked.

“That, by the way... what exactly is the ‘room’? I don’t think it is the rooms that I know.”

“It is easy.”

The boy pointed to a square tile.

The tiles were also present on the platform of line 3. Green tiles that were 1 pyeong in size. Looking at the details, I saw something written in the air above the tile.

[Green Zone 0/1]

“The scenario name is ‘green zone’ and these tiles are called rooms.”

Near the tile, two men were fighting each other. They were fighting over the tile. It was Lee Hyunsung who asked this time.

“What is that? Why are those people fighting over it?”

The boy looked a bit reluctant. It was like talking to us would be a threat to his survival.

“You will know once you arrive at the second underground floor.”

As we climbed up to the higher floors, there were more fights over rooms. The room numbers were different. There were small rooms labelled (0/1) and large rooms labelled (0/7). The latter number was probably the capacity of the room.

I looked around carefully and asked, “The third underground floor to the first underground floor is all the area of the Landlord Association?”

“...Yes. There are small forces but the Landlord Association has obtained most of it.”

All the infrastructure of Chungmuro was located on the second and first underground floors, yet a single alliance occupied all of it.

“Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t take any action? Didn’t he save you?”

“That...”

The boy’s face became noticeably darker at my question. The boy looked sullen for a while before barely being able to speak.

“He told us to stand on our own...”

I knew. Of course Yoo Jonghyuk would say something like this. Perhaps Yoo Jonghyuk never told them to follow him. They were fascinated by the overwhelming force that Yoo Jonghyuk showed and had hopeful dreams. How pitiful.

Not long after, we arrived at the second underground floor. There was tension on the boy’s face.

“We have to be careful from here onwards.”

There were much more rooms on B2 than the lower levels. The group of people fighting couldn't be seen. Instead, people were guarding the green zones with scary eyes.

[Green Zone 7/7]

We passed by the people and headed towards the bathrooms.

"Uh... why stop here?"

Our pace stopped as we approached the last passage to the bathroom. Like a bottleneck, dozens of people were gathered in the passage.

"Let's go forward."

I spoke while pushing people out of the way.

"Pildu-ssi! Please accept it! I won't do it again!"

"Please, please! Please let me stay one more day. I'll go into debt to get the coins!"

The leader at the head of the line was facing the heated up people.

"Now now, back off. Back off."

On the opposite side, people who seemed to be from the Landlord Association were gathered. I could instinctively feel it.

One of the 10 Evils was here. I tried to find the '10 Evils' member through the novel's description but it wasn't easy since all of them seemed to fit.

Did their impressions became similar after becoming landlords?

I was shaking my head when someone grabbed my leg. It was Lee Gilyoung. I sensed something danger and was about to grab his shoulder when someone pushed Lee Gilyoung.

"Ah."

Lee Gilyoung lost his balance and fell down.

[The character 'Lee Gilyoung' has invaded private property!]

Suddenly, the atmosphere became cold and some of the 'Landlord Association' members in the front looked at Lee Gilyoung.

"What is this child?"

At almost the same time, the crowd of people screamed and withdrew.

"Crazy!"

"B-Back! Quickly!"

As if they were never there, the crowd of people rushed back like the tide. The people disappeared and red lines shone where they used to be standing. One man looked between the boundary and Lee Gilyoung in turn.

"Hmmm. You seem to be lost. Do you know where this is?"

"The way to the bathroom?"

"The bathroom? Haha, at one time. By the way, that kid... where are your parents?"

"...Huh?"

"Didn't you learn that you shouldn't intrude on other people's land?"

Other people's land. Oh, it must be true.

The man stroked Lee Gilyoung's head with an unknown look.

"You don't know. From now on, I will teach you."

[The character 'Gong Pildu' has activated 'Armed Zone Lv. 3!]

There was a whirring sound and mini turrets resembling gatling guns rose from the ground.

[The character 'Gong Pildu' demands 500 coins for invading his private land.]

[If you don't follow the recommendations, all nearby turrets will fire immediately.]

The man spoke.

“Give me money.”

The loaded turrets were all aiming at the same point. The confused Lee Gilyoung stood up and moved to my side. The man saw me and laughed.

“Ah, you are his guardian. Then shouldn’t the guardian pay 500 coins instead?”

I smiled at the hand that the man brazenly stretched out.

...How funny, Yoo Jonghyuk. You let these jerks go?

Chapter 28

Landlord (2)

The 10 Evils.

The list and rankings were often changed according to Yoo Jonghyuk's regression cycle, but they were the 10 people in charge of being the main villains in this world of Ways of Survival.

Chungmuro's armed fortress master, Gong Pildu was one of the 10 Evils. Thus, a person wouldn't be aware of Gong Pildu unless they read to the end of Ways of Survival (like me).

[Green Zone 56/70]

Indeed, the size of his room was different. The size of the room couldn't be easily measured. This whole green zone was Gong Pildu's area.

Let's do the standard procedure. I hid Lee Gilyoung behind me and opened my mouth.

"Why should we pay you coins? Chungmuro Station is a public place."

"Haha, it was until eight days ago. But not anymore."

For ordinary humans, 500 coins wasn't a small sum. But giving 500 coins just for stepping on his land... what a crook.

"Okay, I'll give it. But I'll give it to you directly."

"What?"

"You aren't Gong Pildu."

Gong Pildu might be a villain but right now, the person in front of me was just Extra '1' of the Landlord Alliance.

Where are you, Gong Pildu? I quickly looked around. Not him, not him... I wondered where Gong Pildu was.

“Haha, you are a funny guy. Hey, playing with me now...”

“Gong Pildu-ssi. Where are you? Take the fine.”

I ignored them and kept walking.

[You have invaded private property!]

The turrets aimed straight at me but I didn't stop.

Honestly, there was no guarantee that I would be safe if the turrets started shooting. But there was a need to show off my combat power here. That way Gong Pildu wouldn't underestimate me.

“It is up to here. I will give you if you come closer.”

Finally, Gong Pildu moved.

A bench covered with various supplies. A middle-aged man sitting on top of it and reading a magazine was staring at me.

Indeed, this was how he was described in the novel. His belly was half revealed and I could see the hair on it. This was Gong Pildu, the representative of the Landlord Alliance.

“This is a face I've never seen before but you are great.”

“Isn't it unfair that I need to pay to see you?”

[The character 'Gong Pildu' is interested in you.]

In any case, I seemed to be the type that was popular with the bad guys. It was the same with Kim Namwoon.

“You are fairly good at talking. But it isn't good to be too cocky.”

Tadak. I heard magic bullets being loaded in the turrets. Damn bastard.

Gong Pildu smiled like an ordinary neighborhood ahjussi. But I knew. Gong Pildu could never be an ordinary neighborhood ahjussi.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

[Character Information]

Name: Gong Pildu

Age: 48 years old

Constellation Sponsor: Defense Master

Private Attribute: Landlord (Rare), Great Land Owner (Rare)

Exclusive Skills: Private Property Lv. 3, Patience Lv. 1, Profit Calculation Lv. 2, Leadership Lv. 2, Incite Lv. 1, Weapons Training Lv. 1.

Stigma: Armed Zone Lv. 3.

Overall Stats: Stamina Lv. 9, Strength Lv. 11, Agility Lv. 10, Magic Power Lv. 19.

Overall Evaluation: Gong Pildu, the representative of the Chungmuro Landlord Alliance. His skill 'Private Property' and stigma 'Armed Zone' has the best effect in a battle against many. It is advisable not to make him an enemy.

* 'Starter Pack' is currently applied.

* A growth package is currently applied.

+

There were numerous 'gap' in this world, but few of them were as stable as a land owner of landlord. However, there were those who posted both characteristics and the 'armed fortress master' Gong Pildu in front of him was one of them.

I realized it when I saw this explanation. His magic power was already at level 19. Indeed, this would be enough for him to be one of the 10 Evils in the future.

"By the way, what did you come here for? I don't think your goal is paying the fine."

He was also very sensitive. I pondered over it for a while. Should I negotiate here or overpower Gong Pildu.

It might be possible if I used all my power but it wasn't easy to break through Gong Pildu's Armed Zone. I needed to prepare for a big injury if I wanted to defeat the turrets.

What should I do? There was a separate place where I had to use coins so it was

impossible to increase my stats.

“I’m warning you that you shouldn’t think of anything.”

Gong Pildu smiled at me. His troops were surrounding Lee Hyunsung. He really moved quickly.

I laughed and raised both hands.

“Please calm down. Isn’t it obvious for a tenant to come to the landlord?”

“Is it for a room?”

“Yes. Please let my companions and I sit in your green zone”

This was a must. In order to clear the third scenario safely, we had to say in Gong Pildu’s green zone. However, Gong Pildu’s answer was as expected.

“No. The alliance doesn’t accept outsiders. I’ll think about it if every person pays 500 coins a day.”

500 coins a day? It was like selling coins. It was more than the Dokkaebi Bag.

“It is a bit tough so I will give you information instead.”

“What information?”

“Information about Yoo Jonghyuk.”

Yoo Jonghyuk. The complexion of the landlords changed with one name.

“Yoo Jonghyuk? Yoo Jonghyuk caused such an uproar not long ago...”

“You bastard! What is your relationship with that guy?”

“Pildu-ssi! Isn’t this bastard suspicious?”

There was a reaction. I thought that Yoo Jonghyuk would’ve already caused a problem with the Landlord Alliance.

In fact, this point I was a bit unsure about. According to the original story, Yoo Jonghyuk of the third regression should be fighting against the Landlord Alliance by now. What was he doing?

Gong Pildu stared at me with suspicious eyes.

“What is your relationship with Yoo Jonghyuk?”

“We are companions separated by life and death.”

“...I don't think it is like that?”

“Anyway, we are friendly.”

“How can I believe that?”

“Don't believe me. Don't you have nothing to lose?”

I threw out the bait. Perhaps Gong Pildu would have to accept my suggestion. It was because right now, Yoo Jonghyuk was the only person who could threaten the power balance in Chungmuro.

[The character 'Gong Pildu' has activated 'Profit Calculation Lv. 2!]

“Why won't I receive any loss?”

...?

“There is no guarantee that you aren't a scammer. I can't ignore my years of experience. In my experience, people like you run away to avoid paying the rent at the end of the month.”

It was so accurate that I felt wronged. However, it was difficult to push it here.

“If you don't believe me, it can't be helped. Maybe there will be damages.”

Gong Pildu's expression became complicated. I turned around without hesitation. It was important not to show any regret. That way, he would regret it even more.

“Wait a minute.”

Indeed.

“You have to pay the fine for intruding. Where are you trying to flee?”

It was another regret. Dammit. I turned around and smiled awkwardly.

“How much? 100 coins?”

“No, you and that kid are 1,000 coins.”

The vein on my head bulged. Did this bastard think that 1,000 coins was 1,000 won...?

“That is too much.”

The dokkaebi still hadn't given me the cut of the coins but I couldn't give 1,000 coins to a jerk like Gong Pildu.

Gong Pildu grinned.

“Then you are disqualified as tenants. Die.”

I instinctively pushed through the men around me and ran to where my party members were.

Kwang!

There was the first firing sound and Lee Hyunsung held up a metal shield, blocking my back. He was really reliable.

“...Dokja-ssi.”

Lee Hyunsung's strength and stamina were level 14 but he spoke very nervously. I could clearly see his trembling arm muscles.

Lee Hyunsung hadn't obtained his second stigma yet, meaning he couldn't hold on against the turrets. Moreover, there was no Jung Heewon. If I started a head to head fight, someone in this party would surely die.

“Gong Pildu-ssi, wait a moment. If we fight then you won't escape any damages.”

“What?”

“It is better not to fight us now.”

“Why?”

The damage had to be shown.

“If we fight now, you will die here.”

Gong Pildu’s expression hardened. Even if I didn’t add anything, Gong Pildu would’ve noticed.

The presence of the guy coming down the escalator from B1. It would be strange if he didn’t know when the guy was giving off such a huge momentum.

“My best companion is coming.”

Yoo Jonghyuk.

I didn’t expect that damn regressor to be happy.

“Master, it is that person. He pretended to be Master’s companion.”

Lee Jihye cried out shrilly as she pointed to me. The main character, the lone hero of a drama, was walking by her side. He looked at me with impressively fierce eyes.

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ is greatly disturbed.]

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 2 has been activated!]

There was a brief moment of dizziness and I started to hear his thoughts.

“How... already?”

I waved to him and said casually.

“Hi Jonghyuk.”

“.....”

“Have you been well? Your face looks good?”

“.....”

Lee Jihye and Gong Pildu looked between us like they couldn’t believe it. They never thought I would be a companion of Yoo Jonghyuk. There was a tight tension in the air.

“These people don’t believe I am your companion. Can you tell them?”

But I knew Yoo Jonghyuk. This bastard killed easily but he kept his promises.

[A few constellations are paying attention to character Yoo Jonghyuk’s answer.]
[The constellation Demon-like Judge of Fire is observing the loyalty of Yoo Jonghyuk.]

Moreover, the constellations were paying a lot of attention.

“.....”

Yoo Jonghyuk watched me and slowly opened his mouth. However, my words were faster.

“Ah right, it would be better if you let me use the bathroom!”

Finally, Yoo Jonghyuk pulled out a blade.



After a while, we safely used the bathroom and came down to the platform of line 3. It was thanks to the fellow regressor companion. I smiled widely.

“Its nice to see you, you rascal.”

“...You are alive.”

In conclusion, Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t call me his companion. He just pointed his blade at Gong Pildu as his answer. Fortunately, Gong Pildu didn’t want to clash with us and let us go.

“Were you hoping I would be killed?”

“I thought it would be good.”

This rotten companion. I became angrier when I saw that cheeky face. I wanted to run over and strike him in the jaw, but I couldn't.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[There is too much information about this person. Character List is converted to Summary List.]

Full version.

[Converting the character information of 'Yoo Jonghyuk' into the 'full version.']

+

[Character List]

Name: Yoo Jonghyuk.

Age: 28 years old.

Constellation Sponsor: ???

Private Attribute: Regressor (3rd turn) (Myth), Pro Gamer (Rare)

Exclusive Skills: Sage's Eyes Lv. 8, Hand to Hand Combat Lv. 8, Advanced Weapons Training Lv. 5, Strong Self-Defense Lv. 5, Mental Barrier Lv. 5, Crowd Control Lv. 5, Reasoning Lv. 5, Lie Detection Lv. 4... (Omitted)...

Stigma: [Regression Lv. 3]

Overall Stats: Stamina Lv. 24, Strength Lv. 24, Agility Lv. 25, Magic Power Lv. 23.

Comprehensive Evaluation: The comprehensive evaluation of this person is too long to load.

+

It didn't seem that great in the novel. But now that I saw it myself, I knew how extraordinary it was.

We were about to enter the third scenario and his physical body stats were just over 70. This crazy bastard. Dammit, this was the main character buff.

“Do you have anything to say?”

Yoo Jonghyuk's growth rate was steeper than it was in the original three regression. The fact that his growth was so fast meant he was taking great risks... what the hell was the person who only returned three times doing? Something was making me uneasy. I would have to dig it out sooner or later...

“I asked if you had anything to say.”

“No, I was just looking.”

“...He is more tenacious than I thought.”

What tenacity? He had a serious chuuni disease.

“However, being cheeky isn’t good. Should I just kill him now?”

“I’m joking.”

I hurriedly laughed. Yoo Jonghyuk turned his head like he wasn’t interested.

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ is disappointed in you.]

Anyway, I didn’t want to alienate Yoo Jonghyuk right now. In order to clear the multiple scenarios, Yoo Jonghyuk was a necessary person. Even if we weren’t real companions, it was worth using him thoroughly.

...Why did it sound like I was making excuses?

“It looks like you’ve obtained companions.”

Yoo Jonghyuk looked at the people behind me with emotionless eyes.

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ is a bit disappointed in you.]

...What? Why?

The answer became clear.

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ has used Sage’s Eyes Lv. 8!]

“He picked up Lee Hyunsung but was only to raise him to this level.”

I was at a loss for a moment because it was true. Certainly, Lee Hyunsung’s growth would be better if he had moved with Yoo Jonghyuk.

Still... this bastard. I was just an ordinary reader who luckily got to know the future.

“It is below expectations.”

It seemed worse because I was hearing the words in my mind. At that moment, Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes stopped as he was looking around. For the first time, confusion could be seen in his eyes.

“...What is that?”

Chapter 29

Landlord (3)

Yoo Jonghyuk was looking at everyone except for Lee Hyunsung. The three remaining people were standing together and I couldn't figure out exactly who Yoo Jonghyuk was looking at.

"...How is this possible?"

Who was he looking at? I wanted to ask but I was afraid that my skill would be exposed. Yoo Jonghyuk still didn't know that I knew him.

However, I guessed that he might've seen the information of Jung Heewon. Jung Heewon saw Yoo Jonghyuk's gaze and confronted him.

"What are you looking at?"

"..."

Good job, Jung Heewon.

"Kill..."

"Yoo Jonghyuk." I quickly opened my mouth. "I was wondering about one thing."

He turned to look at me. His eyes were questioning.

"Why are you leaving Gong Pildu alone?"

"If you are a prophet, you should know."

"I don't know everything."

To be exact, I didn't remember everything.

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' has used the 'Lie Detection' skill.]

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk has confirmed that your words are true.]

He was thorough.

“...Indeed, I see. A prophet whose level of ‘future sight’ is low.”

Think what you want.

Yoo Jonghyuk continued speaking.

“I need Gong Pildu alive.”

“Is it because of a future scenario?”

Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t answer. It was like he was trying to gauge the information I knew.

“I know that you need Gong Pildu for future scenarios. But you only need Gong Pildu. You don’t need the entire group that follows him.”

“...”

“Isn’t it your style to remove what you don’t need? Why are you just leaving them?”

“...How annoying.”

What?

“I have a lot to do.” Yoo Jonghyuk stared at me quietly and said, “You will never understand.”

“Wait! That isn’t the problem. If you don’t move now, most of the humans in Chungmuro will...!”

Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes were cold.

“It doesn’t matter.”

I wasn’t a humanist. I didn’t believe that everyone in this world was worth living. The thing that was making me angry right now was Yoo Jonghyuk.

“Yoo Jonghyuk. Can I hit you?”

“If you have confidence.”

I angrily formed a fist as I heard a message.

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk has used ‘Strong Self-Defense Lv. 5’.]

I dropped my fist. Cowardly bastard.

“Are you finished?”

“...”

“Let’s go.”

Lee Jihye flinched at Yoo Jonghyuk’s call. Lee Jihye, who belated followed Yoo Jonghyuk, looked at me with confused eyes.

[The constellation ‘Bald General of Justice’ is impressed by your chivalrous spirit.]
[100 coins have been sponsored.]

Of course, it was completely misleading.

◇ ◇ ◇

[There are 1 hour and 30 minutes before the third scenario is activated.]

There wasn’t much time left and my mind was complicated.

[The constellation ‘Bald General of Justice’ is angry that people’s lives must be risked.]
[The constellation ‘Bald General of Justice’ wants an uprising.]

Samyeongdang spoke loudly in my head but I couldn’t think of a good way. The third scenario lasted exactly one week.

Maybe Yoo Jonghyuk was planning to gain some other advantage during the duration of the third scenario.

Of course, I couldn’t let it go. I couldn’t let it go...

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is wondering what you are thinking.]

"That jerk Yoo Jonghyuk."

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is satisfied.]

[100 coins have been sponsored.]

In fact, the problem in front of me wasn't Yoo Jonghyuk but Gong Pildu. In order to break through the third scenario, Gong Pildu's help was absolutely necessary. But if I couldn't get his help...

Suddenly, Jung Heewon looked up and smiled.

"Who is it?"

"...Huh?"

"You know, that person. The one you were talking to Yoo Jonghyuk about."

I immediately explained about Gong Pildu. Jung Heewon was unconscious so she hadn't been able to see Gong Pildu. I didn't mean to change the subject. Jung Heewon immediately reacted.

"...What are these scum? Taking the public facilities and making people pay to use them?"

"The scum are upstairs."

"I'll go and throw them out."

Jung Heewon picked up the ground rat blade. That reminded me, I should change their weapons. There was a lot to be done.

"It is absurd."

"We can win if we join forces. Don't you remember Gumho Station?"

Jung Heewon's expression was confident.

It was natural. Jung Heewon had the Judgment Time skill as a trump card. She had good senses and was quick to adapt, so she would've already figured out her attribute and skills.

"Don't dawdle! Let's go and kill them!"

As long as her opponents were 'wicket', her Judgment Time boasted the highest power.

[The character 'Jung Heewon' has activated the exclusive skill 'Judgment Time.']

[The constellations of the Absolute Good system are silent at Jung Heewon's request.

[The skill has been cancelled.]

Jung Heewon's face filled with confusion.

"No, this... what? Is it broken?"

Jung Heewon tried to activate the skill again. However, the skill wasn't triggered.

"No... why isn't it activated? Aren't they obviously wicked?"

I laughed at Jung Heewon's question.

"That is what we humans think."

"...What are you talking about?"

"The constellations might be different. There is no guarantee that the good and evil they know is like what we know."

"Ah..."

"Justice is always decided by the majority."

Right now, the majority of constellations have decided that they are 'good.' Humans no longer had the right to decide on justice. Humans were just the puppets of their sponsors.

"That..."

I looked at the party members.

Everyone didn't say anything but they thought in a similar way to Jung Heewon. Lee Hyunsung wiped the iron shield that was scratched by the magic bullets, while Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung sat next to each other on the ground, looking at cockroaches.

This sense of despair, I could understand.

They thought they understood after getting rid of the gang at Gumho Station. However, there was an incomparable monster just three stations away.

It was time to start the torture of hope.

"That doesn't mean there is no way."

"Huh?"

"It might be difficult but there is a way to defeat them."

They simultaneously looked at me. Lee Hyunsung asked.

"...Do you really have a way?"

"What is it?"

I looked around and lowered my voice.

"Get Gong Pildu out of the Armed Zone."

"What is the Armed Zone?"

"His stigma. It is optimized to defend an area."

Armed Zone. The reason why it was difficult to go against Gong Pildu was this stigma. It was a fraudulent ability that could build 'turrets' in an area.

Right now, it was just Armed Zone. Once the stigma evolved in the future, it would become 'Armed Fortress' and a siege needed to be prepared to catch him.

But Gong Pildu had an obvious weakness.

"His Armed Zone will be released as soon as he leaves his designated area. His mini-

turrets will also become useless. Usually, there are many restrictions on such a wide defense skill.”

At the same time, Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon looked at me with admiration.

“Ah... I see.”

“You figured this out after seeing it once? Is this Dokja-ssi’s attribute?”

The same thing was repeated but I saw that the people had adapted to me to some extent. Yoo Sangah asked.

“But how will you make him move?”

“We have to think about that for now.”

“Ah, I hate thinking.” Jung Heewon complained.

Then everyone was silent for a while. It was Lee Hyunsung who gave his idea first.

“Attack when he goes to the bathroom...”

“Didn’t you see the things next to the bench?”

Gong Pildu never moved out of his Armed Zone. His bench had everything he needed. There was a sleeping bag, blanket, food, basic with water to eat and sleep and even a place to piss. Of course, the tenants provided him with them.

“Crazy. He is a complete shut in. No, is he not moving because he is hiding something good on the land?”

“It is the biggest ‘room’ in Chungmuro.”

“...Room?”

That reminds me, Jung Heewon still didn’t know about the rooms. But there was no need for me to explain.

[There is 1 hour before the third scenario is activated.]

She would soon find out.

“We also need to find a room.”

The moment our party got up, the people around us flinched.

“D-D-Don’t come closer!”

In particular, the man with a knife who was protecting a single person room on the No. 3 line platform showed high vigilance. However, other people rushed towards him before we could approach.

“Get out, your fucker!”

They attacked indiscriminately. As soon as the man was pushed out, the mark of the green zone changed. The owner had changed.

[Green Zone 1/1-> Green Zone 0/1].

The people were engaging in a bloody fight over the room. Someone was stabbed in the thigh while someone had their nose broken.

Jung Heewon frowned.

“Shouldn’t we stop that?”

“Even if we intervene, the result will be the same. In the end, somebody will die.”

“Why does someone have to die?”

“It isn’t possible to avoid in this scenario.”

I had just finished speaking while Bihyung emerged in the air.

[Now no, shall we start the third day of the main scenario? New faces have arrived today so won’t it be fun? Hahaha!]

Bihyung glanced my way.

There were three dokkaebis in charge of the Chungmuro scenario. It seemed that

Bihyung was temporarily the representative. It was a natural consequence of being the smallest of the three channels.

Then the third scenario arrived in front of us.

+

[Main Scenario #3 – Green Zone (Day 3)]

Category: Main

Difficulty: C

Clear Conditions: Occupy the ‘green zone’ in the station and survive the monsters that emerge every night at midnight. This scenario will last 7 days.

Duration: 8 hours.

Compensation: 1,000 coins

Failure: —

+

Lee Hyunsung’s eyes widened.

“T-This...!”

[It is simple. Occupy the green zone before other people. Of course, you can take away the green zone of others. By the way, you should hurry. If you don’t have a green zone after the scenario starts, you will have a terrible experience. Haha, then everyone should try it!]

People’s expressions hardened as they heard Bihyung’s words. In the meantime, the screams of the people continued.

Peok! Peok! Peok!

“Die! Die!”

“I-I’m not doing this because I have a grudge! I must survive...”

Maybe this was what everyone realized. The struggle in front of us was no longer a story. Yoo Sangah asked in a trembling voice.

“Surely we don’t have to fight like these people?”

“We don’t need to fight. Just find a room that can accommodate a large number of

people.”

“The size of the green zones vary by type. It ranged from fitting only one person to fitting 70 people like Gong Pildu’s area.

“Of course, if there are any rooms left.”

Jung Heewon opened her mouth at my words.

“Dokja-ssi is really talented at making people uneasy... then let’s move right away. Maybe there are some rooms left.”

“It might be faster to split up. Divide the team. Hyunsung-ssi will move with Sangah-ssi, while Heewon-ssi should take Gilyoung.”

“Dokja-ssi?”

“I’m fine on my own.”

I didn’t have to say anything else. Everyone trusted me. Lee Gilyoung spoke first.

“Hyung, that... what if we can’t find one?”

“If we can’t find a room 20 minutes before the scenario starts, we will gather here again.”

“I understand. Then I’m going.”

The team scattered in an orderly fashion. Jung Heewon and Lee Gilyoung went to B2 while Yoo Sangah and Lee Hyunsung went to B3. I watched my companions leave before turning on the smartphone. As soon as I opened Ways of Survival, a sentence immediately popped up.

“There were no rooms left in Chungmuro.”

This fact was written clearly. It was likely that they wouldn’t be able to find any rooms.

Then they could only choose one way. In order to survive, kill someone else and take their room. But could Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon do it?

Not everyone here was 'wicked.' There were some who exploited others, like Gong Pildu. But in fact, most of them bared their teeth in order to protect themselves.

Could Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung bare their teeth to people like that? I would know the answer very soon.

Chapter 30

Landlord (4)

After the dokkaebi disappeared, dozens of casualties appeared on the platform of line 3.

Currently, there was only one room on the line 3 platform.

There was no one strong here, so the weak didn't back down and attacked each other.

"Die! Die!"

[There are 30 minutes before the third scenario is activated.]

As pandemonium occurred around me, I was quietly reading Ways of Survival. Perhaps today's scenario would flow as I thought. In order to survive, I couldn't miss a single word.

[What are you doing now?]

Along with Bihyung's words, I could hear the messages of the constellations.

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is wondering what you are doing.]

I reflexively turned off my smartphone. There was something I hadn't thought of until now. Why didn't the constellations respond when I read Ways of Survival?

In the original Ways of Survival, the constellations discovered that Yoo Jonghyuk was a regressor and raised questions about fairness. It was normal for them to say something about the text I was reading.

[What are you doing right now with a blank notepad? All the constellations are going crazy with frustration because of you!]

...Blank notepad?

I turned on the smartphone again. Ways of Destruction appeared on the screen.

“Is this what you are referring to?”

[Yes! What are you going to do with that notepad? You will die if you stay still! Ha, I believed in a guy like this and signed a contract...]

I got goosebumps.

The dokkaebi couldn't read this 'text.' If even the dokkaebis, which managed the system, couldn't read it then the constellations were the same.

Then the writer who gave me the text... what type of existence was he?

“Kuaack!”

The last scream rang out. Finally, the owner of the room on platform line 3 was determined.

[Green Zone 1/1]

“...Don't come any closer.”

A boy was pointing a knife at me. Surprisingly, the winner was the boy who guided us earlier. I still didn't know his name.

“Don't worry, I won't take your room.”

I spoke in order to reassure the boy. The moment I had this thought.

“Really? You are quite relaxed Ahjussi. Do you want to die?”

I didn't need to look back to see who was talking.

“It looks like you are quite free.”

“Nobody touches my room. I will send everyone who touches it to hell.”

Lee Jihye twirled a deep blue blade round and round. In regards to specs, there was no one who could match Lee Jihye apart from Yoo Jonghyuk or people from the

Landlord Alliance. Lee Jihye watched me carefully and opened her mouth.

“I don’t want Ahjussi to die. You were quite impressive against Master earlier.”

“Don’t worry, I won’t die. It won’t die even if I don’t find a room.”

It was true. I wouldn’t necessarily die if I couldn’t find a room. There was an impossible man in this station who proved this. It was only three days ago.

Lee Jihye’s eyes narrowed.

“Ahjussi, do you know what you are saying right now?”

“Yes.”

“Ahjussi, are you strong? As strong as Master?”

Then Yoo Jonghyuk appeared behind Lee Jihye.

“Stop and go back to your room.”

“Ah... yup. Master.”

Lee Jihye obediently left and Yoo Jonghyuk turned towards me.

“Are you going to fight the monsters?”

I shrugged.

“You will die. Your four companions as well.”

“That remains to be seen.”

There was an unknown emotion in Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes as he glanced at me and left. I didn’t use Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint. It wasn’t always possible to expression emotions with words.

[There are 20 minutes before the third scenario is activated.]

There was the sound of people coming down the stairs. Lee Hyunsung, Lee Gilyoung

and Yoo Sangah... looking at their dark expressions, the result was as I expected. Yoo Sangah opened her mouth with a gloomy expression.

“Room... there were non.:

“It is okay. Rather, where is Heewon-ssi?”

“She is trying to negotiate upstairs.”

At these words, Jung Heewon jumped down with a terrible scream.

“One night is 2,000 coins? Are they joking right now? I am really going to hit them.”

The agitated Jung Heewon snorted and said.

“Dokja-ssi. Do you know what is happening upstairs? No—”

“They suddenly raised the taxes right?”

“Eh... you already know?”

It was predictable. The tenants would die if they couldn't get a room in 20 minutes. It was no wonder that the owners would take the initiative to raise the taxes.

“Did Dokja-ssi find anything?”

“No, I didn't.”

“Ah...”

I examined their faces one by one. In the end, the time to choose had come.

“I have two ways.”

The eyes of the party members shone at these words. But my methods would probably betray their expectations.

“The first way is easy for all of us to live.”

Jung Heewon's eyes narrowed.

“Usually it is the second method... what is the other one?”

“The second method is very difficult. It is likely that some of us will die.”

“Eh... that can't happen. Then I will choose the first way.”

“What do the others think?”

Lee Hyunsung responded first.

“The first method will be good if everyone can live.”

Lee Gilyoung nodded. Only Yoo Sangah hesitated.

“...Can I hear what it is?”

I nodded and lead them up the stairs to transit line 4.

“This is the first method.”

The party members looked at where I pointed. There was a group of five men and women shaking.

[Green Zone 5/5]

“The room they occupy has exactly five spaces. But their individual abilities isn't that high. Honestly, if the five of us...”

“Wait, Dokja-ssi—”

“Yes, kill them and take their room.”

Their trembling increased at my calm voice. Jung Heewon made a deeply wounded expression.

“...Who doesn't know about this method?”

“If Hyung says so, I can do it.”

Lee Gilyoung spoke first.

“I’m not afraid. I will do it.”

“No Gilyoung!”

Yoo Sangah grabbed Lee Gilyoung’s shoulder. I deliberately looked uncaring.

“They would’ve also killed someone to take that room. Honestly, we can’t overcome future scenarios if we can’t do this.”

“Dokja-ssi.” Jung Heewon interrupted. “I killed people at Gumho Station. I killed because I wanted to and I don’t regret it. But.”

Jung Heewon had a pained expression on her face.

“Just because I am a murderer doesn’t mean I want to keep killing. I don’t want to be a monster.

“...”

“...Dokja-ssi, I would like to know about the second method.”

I closed my eyes for a moment at Lee Hyunsung’s words.

“I understand your thoughts.”

Yes, this was enough.

“Let’s go the second way.”

The expressions of the party members seemed to brighten. In fact, I was going to use the second method from the beginning.

Killing was an easy way to survive, but I could never attract the attention of the constellations if I chose the easy method.

However, the second method required considerable determination. It wasn’t just me but everyone. Thus, I needed to check their determination. I had to know what these people were really thinking.

Jung Heewon laughed.

“...I thought so. Why are you talking when you were going to go with the second way?”

“I wasn’t trying to test you. Whatever choice you made, I would’ve respected it.”

I stroked Lee Gilyoung’s head, who was looking up at me with uneasy eyes. Yoo Sangah sighed and opened her mouth.

“Dokja-ssi is really spiteful.”

“I’m sorry I’m not a good person.”

“What is the second method?”

“There is no need to kill anybody with this method. But it is very difficult.”

At my heavy tone, the expressions of the party members became determined.

“If you choose the second method, please unconditionally follow my instructions. Please trust me, even if it doesn’t make sense. If one person doesn’t trust me—”

“...”

“We will all die.”

Someone gulped. The party members nodded almost simultaneously. Lee Hyunsung said.

“I believe in Dokja-ssi. I have survived up to here because of Dokja-ssi.”

[There are 5 minutes before the third scenario is activated.]

“Then follow me.”

I moved with the party members along railway line 3. We passed through the broken screen door and stood at the entrance of the tunnel leading to Euljiro-3.

Inside the dark tunnel, I saw a glowing ‘red zone.’ Perhaps the monsters would be created over there. They would sweep over line 3 and go up each floor towards the ground.

Lee Hyunsung asked nervously.

“...Then are we fighting the monsters here?”

“No, we aren’t fighting. If we fight here then we will die.”

It wasn’t possible to fight against the terrifying monsters and survive until dawn without the green zone.

This time, Jung Heewon asked.

“...Then will we run towards the Dongdae area?”

“That won’t work. Once the scenario is activated, we will automatically die if we leave Chungmuro.”

“Then...”

“This operation needs to be shared. Lee Hyunsung-ssi, Yoo Sangah-ssi and Jung Heewon-ssi. Once the monsters appear, run straight in the direction they are coming from.”

“...Huh?”

“Understood? Just run towards them. Just before you encounter them, be sure to look at the left wall. Then you will know that I mean.”

The people didn’t understand my words but there was no time to explain to them.

“Just trust me or you will die. Don’t forget to look at the left wall.”

“I understand Dokja-ssi.” Yoo Sangah seemed to understand what I meant and answered first.

“I am telling you in person. You must run after the monster appears.”

I picked up a stone and threw it towards the tunnel. Then stone sparked as it hit something and fell. Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon nodded as if they understood.

“What about Dokja-ssi?”

“I’ll find another way with Gilyoung.”

This method couldn’t be used unless my party members believed in me. Who would go against common sense and commit a suicide attack by rushing towards the monsters?

The only thing left was their determination.

[The third main scenario is enabled.]

The barrier that was blocking the tunnel to Euljiro-3 disappeared.

“Run!”

The three people started running the moment I called out.

Grrr!

The monsters started to be created in the red zone. It was mainly the grade 9 ground rats. Then the middle ranks were filled with the intermediate grade 9 underground species, the ‘groll.’

Kuoooooh!

A monster with a black mane that was in the shape of a bear. The sharp horns on their foreheads was threatening.

One was relatively easy to deal with. The problem was the number. The crowded columns was already not suitable to be called a ‘group.’ We would die if we hit that wave.

The moment Lee Hyunsung encountered the first groll, I shouted.

“Now!”

Yoo Sangah found it first. Green tiles shimmering on the wall.

“Ah—!”

The enlightenment was instant The moment Yoo Sangah’s hand touched the wall, it

emitted a bright light.

[Green Zone 1/3]

The agile Jung Heewon immediately touched the wall behind her.

[Green Zone 2/3]

However, Lee Hyunsung missed the timing. It was because the ground rats clung to Lee Hyunsung's shield.

"Hyunsung-ssi! Catch it!"

Lee Hyunsung grabbed the 'thread' that Yoo Sangah threw him. Thanks to the strength of the two women, Lee Hyunsung flew through the air and reached the wall.

[Green Zone 3/3]

Good.

Grrrrrrrr!

The monsters stared at them but once they entered the green zones, the monsters couldn't attack.

"Dokja-ssi!"

Yoo Sangah called out to me but there was no time to look back. I was already running with Lee Gilyoung on my back.

"...In the third main scenario, there are several hidden green zones. This is activated on a specific wall and the green zones on the wall won't appear until after the scenario starts... if you think about it, humans were the ones who thought of it as the concept of a 'room'."

In Ways of Survival, Yoo Jonghyuk went through numerous regressions and found some secret green zones in Chungmuro.

On the platform of line 3, there were two such green zones.

Kiiiiiit!

A few ground rats chasing after me bit me in the thigh. The blow wasn't big because of my high strength, but these small things could accumulate.

Kwack!

Lee Gilyoung hit a few ground rats with a blunt weapon from his position on my back. But there were too many of them. In addition, the groll were fast.

A dozen metres away, the boy was looking at me with terrified eyes.

[Green Zone 1/1]

It was cowardly but I was tempted to take the easy road for a second.

[Hahahaha! This situation is fun. Then like yesterday, should there be a penalty?]

A dokkaebi spoke followed by the system messages.

[A scenario penalty has been added!]

[Some existing green zones will be disabled.]

"N-No! Uack, aaaaack!"

Screams rang through Chungmuro Station. The closest scream came from the boy.

Kwajijijik!

"Aaaaack!"

As soon as the green zone disappeared, the boy's small body was shredded by the ground rats.

Thanks to the boy's body buying time, I was able to run into the passage. However, the monsters that came from beyond the broken screen door blocked the path.

I hid Lee Gilyoung behind me and pulled out Unbroken Faith. The blade of White Pure Star Energy quickly pushed back the incoming monsters.

But the numbers didn't go down at all. The person who fought with these monsters until sunrise, Yoo Jonghyuk was a monster. I wasn't sure it was possible for me, even if I changed all my coins to stats.

At this moment, Lee Gilyoung spoke.

"Hyung, you know."

"Don't talk now. I'm busy."

"You can just leave me here."

"...What?"

"I really don't understand it. Why are you helping me, Hyunsung hyung and the noonas? If you are alone... you would be able to survive better."

He could calmly speak such words before his death. Maybe this kid's mind was already dead.

"Yes, you are right." Another ground rat fell to the ground with its head cut off. "It is comfortable to live alone, eat alone and survive alone. But..."

Why was I acting this way? If anyone asked me, I couldn't exactly explain. But I could say one thing with certainty.

"I know one novel that developed in such a way and was ruined."

"Huh?"

I thought it every time but I wasn't a protagonist. I wouldn't be a hero or a savior. But...

Lee Gilyoung's eyes were shaking. I lifted him onto my back again and said.

"Hold on tight."

I wouldn't let Lee Gilyoung die. At least, not today.

Chapter 31

Landlord (5)

As I watched the surging wave of monsters, I gave strength to my thighs. The level 15 strength condensed at once and my feet developed a strong propulsion force.

The ground rats ran from all directions and the hard horns of the grolls flew from unexpected places.

My skin, which was tempered by the level 15 stamina, became bruised and bloody from the grolls' horns.

[The number one bookmark has been activated.]

Bookmark was activated and Kim Namwoon's Blackening wrapped around my body. I pushed away all the monsters coming from the front.

Fangs burrowed into my body and a few ground rats bit my thighs. However, I didn't stop. Run and run again.

Over here. Finally, the original wall was visible. I jumped over the ground rats. There was a green zone for two people shining.

By the way... shit.

[Green Zone 1/2]

There was already someone inside.

“ ... ”

I forgot about the monsters coming from behind and stared at him. There was a guy who should never be there.

“Hey.”

He turned to me.

“Can’t you get out? You don’t even need to stay in here.”

“It is difficult. I am tired today.”

I pushed to punch this asshole’s face. I didn’t understand. This wasn’t the ‘third regression’ Yoo Jonghyuk that I knew.

In Ways of Survival, it was written that Yoo Jonghyuk only found the first hidden green zone in the fourth regression... damn, did he know about this place since the second regression and it just wasn’t described? Then why didn’t he originally use it in the third regression?

Grrrr!

There were the cries of the ground rats chasing me from behind. It was too late to blame the writer. I could feel Lee Gilyoung’s breathing. I stared into Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes. We spoke at almost the same time.

“Take the kid.” “Give me the child.”

Still, it was lucky. The constellations would hear my words.

[Green Zone 2/2]

I moved Lee Gilyoung and the mark of the green zone changed. Now Lee Gilyoung was safe.

“Hyung! Wait a minute! Hyung!”

Lee Gilyoung urgently tried to rush towards me but Yoo Jonghyuk’s hand restrained him. I swung my sword towards the ground rats.

[The constellation ‘Bald General of Justice’ has closed his eyes.]

[The constellation Demon-like Judge of Fire is watching you with uncomfortable eyes.]

At the last minute, Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes seemed to move.

“I told you that you would die.”

The waves of monsters headed towards me. Now there were no more green zones remaining.

“I won’t die.”

I ignored the monsters and put a hand in my pocket. In fact, I really didn’t want to use this. I couldn’t be assured that there would be no aftereffects. Now I had to believe in the Fourth Wall.

“That...?”

Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes shook with surprise. This bastard, did he find out? Well, I wouldn’t have known this method without him.

I looked down at the white stone shining in the palm of my hand.

[Specter’s Stone.]

It was an item I gained by hunting specters on the way to Chungmuro.

Hundreds of ground rats started biting at my body.

I was bleeding from minor wounds and the shoulders struck by the grolls’ horns were red with blood. As the durability of my body rapidly diminished, I put the stone into my mouth.

Then something like water vapor started to emerge from my mouth. The water vapor formed a fog that covered me.

[The Welcome Prison is activated.]

The ground rats and grolls stopped attacking me at once.

Everything around me started to distort. The platform, Yoo Jonghyuk and Lee Gilyoung calling out to me.

I became a ‘ghost.’

“Dokja.”

I noticed as soon as I heard my mother’s voice. This was a dream.

I tried not to get caught up in it but it wasn’t easy this time. The floor sank like a quagmire and swallowed me.

[Due to excessive immersion, the influence of Fourth Wall has temporarily weakened.]

Scenes started to weave in front of me, no matter what I wanted.

A living room covered with blood. The cold body of a man. The back of a woman looking down at the body. No. This memory was difficult to remember. I couldn’t remember it.

I shook my head furiously and the scene in front of me scattered. This damn trauma...

It was a memory I didn’t want to see.

This was why I was reluctant to eat the Specter’s Stone. The Specter’s Stone temporarily made the user a ‘ghost’ and turned them invisible to monsters. But it has a side effect of causing the user’s trauma to peak.

That’s why I didn’t give it to the other party members. If it had been used by someone other than myself, they might’ve turned into a madman.

...

I had to endure, even if my head was hurting like crazy.

Certainly, the Fourth Wall was a scam. The skill would even be able to eat away at this stone. I wouldn’t see this effect even with the superior ‘Mental Barrier.’ Where was it? If my guess was correct, this skill...

“Yoo Jonghyuk? Are you Yoo Jonghyuk?”

I thought a trauma had started again but it wasn’t my voice. It wasn’t a voice created by my memories. I looked back and saw a strange woman.

“...You aren’t Yoo Jonghyuk. I think you are Korean but who are you?”

A dazzling blonde foreigner. She was a little girl with a short height. The girl looked at me for a long time with an incomprehensible expression.

“That... I don’t understand. I’ve seen the future a number of times but I’ve never seen you before...”

In the girl’s left eye, an ominous red swirl could be seen. The pages flashed in my head. I knew this person. No, there was absolutely no way I couldn’t know her. In this case...

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[The character ‘Anna Croft’ is using ‘Mental Barrier Lv. 6’.]

[Character List ignores Mental Barrier Lv. 6.]

[There is too much information about this person. Character List is converted to Summary List.]

+

[Character Summary]

Name: Anna Croft

Attribute: Prophet (Legend), Savior (Legend)

Exclusive Skills: Future Sight Lv. 5, Past Sight Lv. 4, Insight Lv. 8, Clairvoyance Lv. 4, Advanced Magic Training Lv. 4, Mental Barrier Lv. 6, Lie Detection Lv. 7, Great Demon’s Eyes Lv. 1...

+

A woman who could ignore space constraints and freely enter the consciousness of other people. A woman who saw the future and tried to design the future of the world. There was only one ‘woman’ with such a way of thinking in Ways of Destruction.

“Anna Croft.”

“...How do you know me?”

Her eyes widened and she glared at me.

I replied quietly, “I’m a prophet.”

[The character Anna Croft has triggered Lie Detection Lv. 7.]

[Lie Detection has confirmed that your words are false.]

Indeed, I couldn't lie to a true prophet.

"...Reveal your true identity. Who are you?"

Her small lips were tightly closed. It looked as though she was protesting.

I anticipated how the situation would roughly occur. The woman noticed my presence, perhaps because the influence of Fourth Wall temporarily weakened. If Fourth Wall was really the skill I thought it was...

By the way... it was disappointing.

"Do you really not know who I am?"

"...Huh?"

"Didn't I send you the ichthyosaur's core?"

Anna's lips slowly widened.

"You must've implanted the 'great demon's eyes' with the power of the core. Right?"

"T-Then you? You asked for Broken Faith...?"

[Great Demon's Eyes.] It was a huge one million coin item that was taken by this woman with a damn diamond sponsor. I felt envious.

"You! What is your name? How..."

[The influence of the exclusive skill 'Fourth Wall' is slowly returning.]

"Why... why can't I see anything...?"

Her eyes became blurred. The influence of the Great Demon's Eyes, which could interfere with the consciousness of others, weakened and her figure gradually faded. I waved my hands.

"Someday we will meet. Wait across the continent."

[The exclusive skill Fourth Wall has been completely restored.]

Anna completely disappeared.

I sighed with relief. In fact, my spirit had been fluctuating back and forth when talking to Anna Croft. It wasn't very good.

[Due to the skill effect, immunity to Welcome Prison has occurred.]

...Dammit, the effect took place too late.

I felt my consciousness clear up.

The discomfort still remained but it was much better than before. I took a deep breath and slowly exhaled. I looked at the distinct facts one by one in order to regain my rationality.

I am Kim Dokja. The world was destroyed. Ways of Survival had become reality. This was... Welcome Prison. I ate the Specter's Stone and was a ghost for a while. If I was a ghost, I wouldn't be attacked by the underground species.

Yes, that's right. So... the world looked like this.

In the midst of the landscape that seemed like I had eaten drugs, the flow of time was hardly noticeable. I became a bit uneasy.

What happened to Yoo Sangah, Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon? That Jonghyuk bastard, did he kill Gilyoung? Was the third scenario still in progress? What if there were still ground rats around? Were the grolls circling in order to eat me?

If so...

...Hyung.

...Please.

...Dokja-ssi!

Voices flashed through my head.

[The exclusive skill 'Permanent Lv. 1' is activated.]

(TL: Temporary name. The skill hasn't appeared before, and there is no explanation. The Korean used for it is usually used for 'perm'. I highly doubt that is right so I went with permanent. I will change if I get more information later)

Yes, it was time to go back.

◇ ◇ ◇

I breathed out roughly. There was a soft texture touching my cheek.

“Dokja-ssi!”

The fog faded and my vision became clear. The first thing that I saw was Yoo Sangah's face. Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon's worried faces also appeared.

“...The scenario?”

“It ended Dokja-ssi. We did it. We did it!”

...I see. We did it.

I looked at the agitated party members and tried to move my body. I had remained stiff for a long time and my muscles barely listened to me.

“Don't be... pleased.”

“Huh?”

“Only one day has passed. Yesterday was the third day...”

Lee Hyunsung caught me as I tried to get up.

“Dokja-ssi! It isn't possible. You haven't slept at all.”

“What time is it now?”

“It is 8:30 a.m. 30 minutes have passed since the scenario ended.”

8:30... fortunately, not too much time passed. By the way, there was a face missing.

“Where is Gilyoung?”

“Ah, Gilyoung...”

Before Jung Heewon spoke, I already discovered where Jung Heewon was. Lee Jihye and Yoo Jonghyuk were looking down at Lee Gilyoung a few steps away.

...No, what was that bastard Yoo Jonghyuk doing?

At this moment, I remembered how Yoo Jonghyuk was surprised when he saw my party. Don't tell me, when Yoo Jonghyuk used Sage's Eyes...?

“When... you have chosen? Obvious never... before.”

Due to the aftereffects of using the stone, Yoo Jonghyuk's voice wasn't heard properly. Then Lee Gilyoung started talking.

“It is okay.”

“...You really won't go with me?”

“Yes.”

“You can become much stronger with me than with him. You still won't go?”

“Yes. I won't.”

“...Stupid kid.”

Yoo Jonghyuk frowned and looked my way.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 2 has been activated!]

“...Lucky guy. He will be helpful so let's keep him a little longer.”

I wanted to say something but I had no energy in my body.

“Dokja hyung!”

Once he discovered that I woke up, Lee Gilyoung rushed towards me with swollen

eyes. Yoo Jonghyuk's thoughts still rang in my head.

"There is no time to delay. I have to finish the attack today. Otherwise..."

...Attack? What was he talking about?

I had to think... Damn, I'm too tired. As I relaxed my body, the softness of the thigh I was lying on touched my cheek again.

"Yoo Sangah-ssi..."

"Y-Yes!"

"Sorry, I'm going to sleep a bit..."

Then I fell sleep. It was a sweet sleep without any dreams.



I woke up two hours later.

[Hey, how long are you going to sleep?]

I opened my eyes at the loud and unpleasant voice. This time, the texture against my cheek was much thicker and harder than before.

"...Ah, Dokja-ssi woke up."

Smiling lips. Jung Heewon was looking down at me.

"Yoo Sangah-ssi took a break. We didn't sleep well last night."

I turned my head and saw Yoo Sangah sleeping against a wall. Jung Heewon smiled.

"By the way, is Lee Hyunsung's thigh comfortable?"

I turned and saw Lee Hyunsung drooling.

"Today in the morning... the on-call officer will conduct the duties..."

...I thought the height of the pillow wasn't right. It turned out to be Lee Hyunsung's thigh. It was an army pillow with a bloody smell.

"Dokja hyung..."

I felt a heavy feeling on my stomach and looked down to see Lee Gilyoung leaning against me and sleeping.

The moment I carefully raised my body, I heard Bihyung's voice.

[Haha, you are awake? Then take this.]

Messages poured into my ears.

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' is sad about your trauma.]

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' is interested in your past.]

[The constellation Secretive Plotter is wondering about your mother.]

[The constellations have sponsored you 1,800 coins.]

...Sons of a bitches. They were trying to steal a peek at my past.

This wasn't the end.

[You have endured Chungmuro's night without the green zone.]

[You have accomplished the 'Never-ending Dawn' achievement at Chungmuro Station!]

[You have earned 1,000 coins as an achievement reward.]

[Coins Possessed: 22,650 C]

I had achieved the target amount. I didn't experience a hard night for nothing.

This time Jung Heewon asked. "What should we do today? Like yesterday..."

"No, not today. That only works for one day."

Of course, if we were lucky then we might be able to find the randomly generated green zone. Unfortunately, there was no detailed description of the location of the green zones on day four in Ways of Survival.

"Then..."

Jung Heewon's expression became dark. But it was unnecessary worry.

"Today we will completely end the third scenario."

"Huh?"

I carefully laid Lee Gilyoung and got up.

It wasn't originally planned but I couldn't wait after hearing Yoo Jonghyuk's thoughts. Yesterday, he had no choice but to buy time. However, the story was different today.

"I will drag out the land owners.

"...How?"

Jung Heewon asked and I looked at Lee Hyunsung, who was sleeping deeply.

"I have to use the secret weapon that I saved."

Now it was time to change the owner of Chungmuro.

Chapter 32

Emergency Defense (1)

“Lee Hyunsung was dozing like an officer on duty,”

Perhaps there would be such a description in Ways of Survival. And maybe there was this sentence.

“Maybe Lee Hyunsung didn’t know. What would happen to him today?”

“Hyunsung-ssi?”

“...Ah, hmm, I fell asleep for a moment. Dokja-ssi, are you well rested?”

“Yes, I’m fine. By the way, you were talking. Officer on duty...”

“Eh, really?”

“Something about Second Class Soldier Lee Hyunsung...”

Lee Hyunsung’s face turned red.

“T-That... Just a trauma from my days as a soldier.”

“Days as a soldier? Isn’t Lee Hyunsung an officer?”

“That... I was transferred to the third unit when I was a corporal.”

“I heard these cases are rare. You must’ve been well-suited for the army.”

Lee Hyunsung laughed. It was a laugh that I could understand. There were few people well-suited for the army. The people who remained didn’t fit elsewhere.

Then it was time to throw a small stone.

“Still, I’m glad that Lee Hyunsung-ssi is here.”

“Huh?”

“I’m relieved when Lee Hyunsung-ssi blocks in front. It feels like someone is protecting me.”

“...Is that so?”

Lee Hyunsung smiled slightly. It was a weak smile, but it was certainly a comforting smile. After exchanging brief greetings, I separated from Lee Hyunsung.

In the original third round development of Ways of Survival, Lee Hyunsung experienced a character evolution by protecting the people at Gumho Station from the Cheoldoo Group. But Jung Heewon took that chance.

Now Yoo Sangah, Jung Heewon and Lee Gilyoung were approaching me. I faced them.

“Did you see the demonstration? Just do what I did.”

“Yes. Well... pretty much. But why do we have to do this?”

There was a reason for it.

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ has started to feel responsible.]

Lee Hyunsung was currently wiping his shield with an innocent expression.

Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint was a scam. At least, as far as ‘characters’ went.

“I want to help Hyunsung-ssi. He looks a bit down these days. Won’t he feel better if you cheer him up?”

I said this for Lee Hyunsung’s sake. The innocent Yoo Sangah nodded her head.

“Is it the saying ‘dance like a while at praise?’”

“It is similar.”

“I understand. I’ll give it a try!”

Unlike Yoo Sangah, Jung Heewon had an uncertain expression.

“Dokja-ssi.”

“Yes.”

“Dokja-ssi’s sponsor isn’t something like ‘One-Eyed Fortuneteller’, right?”

“...What is that?”

“You don’t know?”

Well, there was something like this. For a moment, I thought that Jung Heewon might be the writer of Ways of Survival. For example, Gung Ye was the ‘One-Eyed Maitreya.’

“It isn’t that. I have a special skill. It is a skill that understands people well.”

“...I don’t know if I want to ask, so I won’t.”

“Thank you.”

“But have you ever used it on me?”

I almost showed emotions on my face. It was fortunate that Jung Heewon didn’t have Lie Detection. I looked at Lee Gilyoung and said.

“I only use it on men.”

“Oh my.”

It wasn’t a lie. I haven’t read Jung Heewon’s heart. So far.

“Anyway, I am asking everyone to do this. First is Jung Heewon-ssi, then Yoo Sangah and Gilyoung is last. Please take it in turns to speak to him.”

“‘Oh my, I really believe in Hyunsung-ssi!’ That type of feeling?”

“Please don’t go so far.”

“Sigh, I am really going to die.”

Still, she needed to do it. In order for this plan to succeed, Lee Hyunsung’s ‘attribute

evolution' was absolutely necessary. I would've planned a bit sooner if I knew Yoo Jonghyuk would act like this... but if we tried hard, I should be able to see the result today.

In fact, they seemed to be doing well.

"Hyunsung-ssi is really dependable. You are like a pine tree."

"Haha, thank you Heewon-ssi. My favourite song is Green Pine."

[The character 'Lee Hyunsung' feels proud.]

"I didn't ask."

[The character 'Lee Hyunsung' feels a bit sullen.]

"I don't think I've seen a righteous person like Hyunsung-ssi."

"Ah... that isn't the case. Still, thank you. Yoo Sangah-ssi."

[The character 'Lee Hyunsung' has started to worry about justice.]

"Hyunsung hyung has the best muscles."

"Thank you, everyone."

[The character 'Lee Hyunsung' has increased his self-esteem.]

It was fortunate that Lee Hyunsung was a simple person and such empty praises worked well. After repeating the same conversation several times like this, the system messages started to change.

[The character 'Lee Hyunsung' is waiting for a chance to evolve his attribute.]

Okay. It went smoothly.

Yoo Sangah asked in a slightly worried tone. "But I think Hyunsung-ssi is a bit burdened..."

Yoo Sangah was really nice. Even in this situation, she was concerned about someone

else's heart. I didn't have that ability.

"Maybe a bit. But It is necessary. There are some people in the world who become stronger as they carry more burdens."

"Ah..."

"Don't worry. And... Gilyoung, did you do what I asked?"

"Yes Hyung."

Lee Gilyoung replied from next to Yoo Sangah. On his head, there was a pair of small cockroaches like they were antennae.

"That noona, she is on B1."

"Thank you."

Lee Hyunsung was good. Now it was time to steal the power of others.

I walked up the stairs alone. The people of the Landlord Alliance welcomed me as I went up.

"Haha, who is this? If it isn't the illegal tenant."

"..."

"You are coming up here after doing well. Did you really survive yesterday without a room? Did Yoo Jonghyuk help you?"

I ignored them and kept walking. The Landlord Alliance members kept talking, as if they thought I was scared.

"Isn't it hard to live with Yoo Jonghyuk? Enter our alliance. Pildu-ssi said he would let you."

I didn't care and counted the remaining green zones on every floor. One, two, three... in order for this plan to succeed, I couldn't miss a single one.

"Of course, under the condition that you bring both women."

Now there were 11 green zones remaining. The number had reduced a lot after yesterday's scenario. It was a close number to carry out the plan.

"Hey, are you ignoring me now?"

"I'm listening. Tell him I'm thinking about it."

The alliance members looked at each other and chuckled at my words. They could laugh like that now.

I was walking up the escalator when a blade suddenly reached my neck. I felt very few signs it was coming... there was only one skill that boasted this type of concealed movements in the beginning.

[Ghost Walk.]

"I'm disappointed, Ahjussi."

Lee Jihye. A proud girl with outstanding fighting skills. She wasn't chosen by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare for nothing.

"Ahjussi, don't you know what will happen to those women if you make a deal with them?"

"I know."

"Do you really know? Yesterday, wouldn't you rather die?"

I shrugged.

"Put away the sword. Let's talk."

"Talk? You came to find me on purpose."

"Yes."

Lee Jihye put away the sword. I followed behind Lee Jihye. Lee Jihye walked from B1 to the ticket barrier at the entrance. We seemed to walk for a while.

"What did you want to talk about?"

“But why are you standing there?”

“Master told me to defend this place.”

“...Defend?”

“That’s why I can’t let you pass.”

Lee Jihye touched the ticket gate and drew her hand across her neck. I looked at the passage beyond the ticket gate. There were exit numbers leading to the ground. But not all numbers led to the ground. At that moment, I had an ominous feeling.

...That Yoo Jonghyuk, surely he wasn’t trying that route?

If Yoo Jonghyuk wanted to protect this place, there was only one reason.

As the scenario was in progress, he was secretly trying to attack the ‘hidden dungeon’ of Chungmuro. Hidden dungeon attack. It sounded good. In fact, it wasn’t bad if the main character became stronger.

The problem was that this dungeon was a place that Yoo Jonghyuk couldn’t clear until the end of the third regression. It looked like I should finish this quickly.

“I need your help.”

“My help?”

“Today, I will shatter Gong Pildu’s party.”

“...Are you serious?”

Lee Jihye looked at me like she was trying to see my heart.

[Your understanding of the character ‘Lee Jihye’ has increased.]

“Ahjussi isn’t strong enough. You won’t be able to get rid of them.”

“Even if you help me?”

Lee Jihye’s head jerked like her pride was damaged.

It was natural. Lee Jihye had already challenged Gong Pildu the first day she came to this station. Then she ran away. If Yoo Jonghyuk hadn't appeared to rescue her, she would be dead.

"I have a way. I can do it if you help me."

"...Master told me to stay here."

"If you don't help, most of the people here will die."

"People will die anyway."

"Did Yoo Jonghyuk say that?"

Lee Jihye's eyes shook.

"The boy we talked to yesterday is dead. Do you understand?"

"...I know."

"Maybe he could've lived. Then today, he would be rushing at us to tell us about Yoo Jonghyuk."

"That..."

"Yoo Jonghyuk killed him. He could've saved him."

I felt complicated while talking. I noticed that I wasn't much different from Yoo Jonghyuk. The subway, Gumho Station... I ignored people I might've been able to save because my safety was being threatened.

But hypocrites could speak plausible words.

"I saw the video of your scenario when I was on the subway."

Lee Jihye's small shoulders shook.

"It was a video where you killed your friend to survive."

"...Stop."

“In fact, you didn’t want to do that.”

[The character ‘Lee Jihye’ is greatly disturbed.]

“What do you know?”

“I know what I know. Of course I don’t know. I’m just talking to myself.”

“...”

“But since I am talking, I wanted to say this. If you turn away today, you will regret it for the rest of your life. Definitely.”

[The character ‘Lee Jihye’ has fallen into deep agony.]

I didn’t know the ‘human’ Lee Jihye but I knew the ‘character’ Lee Jihye. This girl was a loyal subordinate of Yoo Jonghyuk. But that was a story for the future, not now. She admired Yoo Jonghyuk’s strength but she was essentially different from Yoo Jonghyuk.

Lee Jihye opened her mouth a few minutes later.

“If I help, people can live?”

“Not everyone, but some will survive.”

“...What should I do?”

“I will start at 7 o’clock this evening.”

I told her the plan. In order to implement this plan, Lee Jihye needed to do the things I told her.

Lee Jihye stared blankly and opened her mouth.

“Are you sane? You will really do this?”

“Yes.”

“...Honestly, I don’t think it will work. I’ll tell you in advance. I don’t think I can help.”

“The choice is yours.”

She said this but Lee Jihye would surely move. She was the person who was chosen by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.

[The constellation Secretive Plotter likes your impudence.]

[100 coins have been sponsored.]

[Lee Jihye’s sponsor likes you.]

[100 coins have been sponsored.]

Now all the preparations were finished.

Chapter 33

Emergency Defense (2)

It was finally the promised time.

I gathered on the line 3 platform with the party. Every member was checking their weapons. Lee Hyunsung seemed to have handled it properly.

“I did as Dokja-ssi asked.”

Since the weapons they had used so far were very old, I asked Lee Hyunsung to produce new weapons. The materials were from the grade 8 underground species, the groll that were killed in the struggle last night. The blades and spears were made by cutting the horns of the groll. They weren't long enough but they were appropriate as a temporary measure.

Jung Heewon smiled like she was satisfied.

“Isn't this much lighter and durable?”

“Ah... Dokja-ssi, Hyunsung-ssi. Thank you very much.”

Yoo Sangah bowed. The groll's horn couldn't be used to make a blunt weapon so only Lee Gilyoung was still carrying a weapon from a ground rat. Lee Gilyoung was silently gazing at the ground. This sulking child... I stroked his head and said.

“It won't be easy. This situation can be more dangerous than yesterday. Are you all ready?”

The party members nodded.

“Then we will start.”

From now on, it was a fight against time. We had to work as quickly as possible before the Landlord Alliance noticed the situation. Jung Heewon, Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung disappeared to their respective floors for their missions, while I started

climbing the stairs with Lee Hyunsung.

Lee Hyunsung spoke in a voice without any confidence.

“Dokja-ssi, I am unsure.”

...He was the core of this operation. He shouldn't be talking like this. I deliberately answered in a strong voice.

“It will be fine.”

However, Lee Hyunsung's face was still timid.

“I think that people are relying on me more than they should. I'm not sure I can do well.”

“Hyunsung-ssi is a dependable person.”

“...Thank you for saying so. In fact, this is my first experience. When I was in the army, I never got someone's trust like this.”

It was the first time I've heard this story. That reminded me, I didn't really know about Lee Hyunsung's army life. Ways of Survival only mentioned it in passing.

“Once this is over, I want to hear Hyunsung-ssi's story.”

I said it casually but Lee Hyunsung was more shaken than I thought.

[The character 'Lee Hyunsung' has started to open his heart to you.]

[Your understanding of the character 'Lee Hyunsung' has greatly increased.]

“Sometimes I feel strange when talking to Dokja-ssi.”

“Huh? Why...?”

“It seems like you knew me from a long time ago... I can't explain it well...” Lee Hyunsung scratched his head and trailed off. “Ah, I don't mean anything strange. I just...”

“I know what you mean.”

“Thank you. I’m also curious about Dokja-ssi’s story.”

“My story?”

“Yes. I have never seen a person like Dokja-ssi before. I’m curious about what you did before this happened.”

Somehow, I felt a bit strange. The ‘supporting cast’ of the novel I read was curious about me. I had a bit uncomfortable and had an itchy feeling.

“It isn’t very interesting.”

“I still want to hear it.”

Suddenly, a question popped into my head.

If Ways of Survival hadn’t become reality, would Lee Hyunsung be living in the same world as me? Or did the novel suddenly emerge as a reality? I didn’t know. One thing was for sure. Lee Hyunsung was now a ‘living person’ in front of me.

“Oh, Yoo Jonghyuk’s friend. Did you come to negotiate?”

At this time, a number of middle-aged men came forward. Chungmuro’s Landlord Alliance.

“Hmm... but where are the women?”

The middle-aged man who spoke was holding a woman by her hair. She was part of the group that had been in the five spaces green zone just yesterday. The man laughed at my gaze.

“Ahh, this friend didn’t see her land... This matter doesn’t concern you.”

“S-Save me. Help me!”

The woman was gazing at me pitifully. In my head, the constellations of the ‘absolute good’ started clamoring. But I waited. It was because I had someone who would act instead of me.

“Let her go.”

It was Lee Hyunsung.

“Who are you?”

Lee Hyunsung looked at me after the middle-aged man’s question. It was like he was asking for permission. I nodded.

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ wants to practice justice of his own will.]

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ is about to evolve.]

The allied members pulled out their weapons and exerted a tremendous momentum. I checked the time. It was time to begin. I raised my stats with my coins.

[1,200 coins have been invested into ‘stamina’.]

[Stamina Lv. 15 -> Stamina Lv. 18]

[Your stamina level has increased dramatically!]

[1,200 coins have been invested into ‘strength’.]

[Strength Lv. 15 -> Strength Lv. 18]

[Your strength level has increased dramatically!]

This was the maximum efficiency with minimal investment.

[Coins Possessed: 20,450 C]

I had another place to spend the remaining coins.

Kwaaaang!

Small blasts were heard all over the subway. A big and small uproar followed. It was the signal.

“Hyunsung-ssi!”

Lee Hyunsung nodded. We ran forward towards the men in the front row. The confused alliance members shouted.

“What, you bastards!”

[The exclusive skill ‘White Pure Star Energy’ has been activated.]

Sukakak!

“Kyaaak!”

The arm of the middle-aged man holding the woman’s head flew away. The middle-aged men froze at the blood that emerged. Lee Hyunsung and I ignored them and kept running. The middle-aged men belatedly chased after us.

“These crazy guys! Stop them!”

A corridor on B2. It was the private land of Gong Pildu.

[You have invaded private property!]

“Surround them!”

The alliance members waiting in front discovered us. Some of the alliance members were missing, so there were less than expected. 20 in the back, 12 in the back. However, it was still a lot of people.

Well, I had no intention of dealing with all of them.

The moment I was about to clash with the alliance members, Lee Hyunsung moved ahead of me with a steel shield.

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ has used the stigma ‘Great Mountain Push Lv. 1.’]

Kwakakakak!

Lee Hyunsung used his tremendous muscle strength and they fell like dominoes.

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ has activated ‘Armed Zone Lv. 4!]

Turrets started to rise from all over the territory. The turrets were charged with red magic bullets and were prepared to fire. There were five mini-turrets. The level of Armed Zone had risen again.

“Dokja-ssi!”

I overtook Lee Hyunsung and at the same time, I received his shield. As soon as the

solid shield entered my hand, a stunning shock from a bullet pushed me away.

Kwang! Kwaang! Kwaang!

It was heavy, as if I was hit by a cannon. The arm holding the shield was in pain. The level 19 magic power was strong. But I had to hold on.

[The compensation effect of Unbroken Faith has increased stamina to level 20.]
[A toughness that is one step higher has protected your body.]

“A cheeky tenant is here.”

Beyond the voice, I heard Gong Pildu’s gruff voice.

Our feet were tied up by the powerful magic bullets while the alliance members were still chasing us. The durability of the iron shield was falling. Now it could only block a dozen magic bullets in the future.

Gong Pildu spoke like it was interesting.

“I don’t think you came here to pay a fine. What is going on?”

“Now I will quit being a tenant.”

“How interesting. Are you coveting my land?”

“We’ll see. More than that...”

[Some of the trespassers’ stats are reduced by the effect of Gong Pildu’s private land.]

...It had started. This was why Gong Pildu’s power was scary. The special effect of Armed Zone was a ‘private land debuff.’

Red magic power started condensing on the turrets.

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ is preparing the ‘strengthened magic bullets.]

As long as the combo of ‘private land’ and ‘armed zone’ wasn’t broken, there were very few incarnations who could deal with Gong Pildu.

“Die.”

The moment that the enhanced magic bullets were about to be launched, I heard the screams of people from far away. The wounded landlord alliance members were rushing to this side.

“P-Pildu-ssi! The land...!”

There were signs they were injured by something sharp. Lee Jihye had moved. Now was the time. I looked at Lee Hyunsung.

“Hyunsung-ssi, now.”

Lee Hyunsung’s eyes were shaking.

“Smash it.”

Lee Hyunsung raised his fists up high. He looked uneasy and irritated, but there was also a firm determination not to retreat.

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ has evolved.]

There was a blinding light and silver aura started to appear around Lee Hyunsung’s body.

I was a bit emotional at the sight. Lee Hyunsung’s ‘character evolution’ was one of the scenes I liked most in Ways of Survival. It was the reason why Steel Sword Lee Hyunsung was called one of the strongest supporting characters. That is—

[Due to the character evolution, a new stigma has been opened.]

When it came to ‘one blow’, Lee Hyunsung was considered one of the strongest in Ways of Survival.

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ has used the stigma ‘Great Mountain Smash Lv. 1.’]

Pale magic power gathered around Lee Hyunsung’s fist and within seconds, Lee Hyunsung’s arms became big enough to transcend common sense.

“Haaaat!”

Lee Hyunsung's fists flammed down onto the ground.

Kwaaaaang!

There was a loud sound and the fragments of the broken floor scattered in the air. The alliance members screamed.

"W-What?"

Jjejejejeok!

Dangerous cracks spread across the ground and the positions of the turrets started to twist. The magic bullets were fired towards the wrong place. An explosion spread and dust clouds rose. Then after a while.

Ku ku ku ku!

There was a great vibration and the ground of B2 started to collapse.

[The green zone has been destroyed.]

[The character Gong Pildu's private land has been destroyed.]

I looked at the collapsing ground and grinned towards Gong Pildu.

"Let's go back to the days when we didn't have our own land."

Chapter 34

Emergency Defense (3)

I couldn't kill Gong Pildu because he was useful in future scenarios, but I needed Gong Pildu to leave his land.

This was a difficult dilemma so I focused on the premise of the dilemma. For example if he was on 'private land' then I had to destroy the private land.

"Uhh... h-he is out."

"This dog..."

However, using this method required strong force. An overwhelming force that could destroy a 'huge' private land in one blow. That's why I hastened to evolve Lee Hyunsung.

"Eeeeok...!"

The people who fell down to the third underground floor groaned with pain.

The operation was a success.

The green zones disappeared and the landlords lost their 'rooms.' Gong Pildu's face was covered with dust and looking this way. As he was about to open his mouth, Bihyung's voice entered their ears.

[What are you doing now? Waaah!]

'Be quiet.'

[Crazy bastard! The dokkaebis of Chungmuro are freaking out because of you!]

I had a headache from the messages of the constellations that rang in my head.

[The constellation Prisoner of the Golden Headband likes your recklessness.]

[The constellation 'Bald General of Justice' likes your revolution.]

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' likes the destruction and chaos.]

[300 coins have been sponsored.]

"Y-You bastard!"

"Kill them!"

The alliance members shouted at us. I started running down to the platform with Lee Hyunsung.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

[Character List]

Name: Lee Hyunsung

Attribute: Person who has Regained Justice (Rare)

Stigma: Great Mountain Smash Lv. 1, Great Mountain Push Lv. 2.

Exclusive Skills: Bayonet Skills Lv. 2, Camouflage Lv. 2, Patience Lv. 1, Sense of Justice Lv. 2, Weapons Training Lv. 3.

+

The evolution of Lee Hyunsung was successful. Strictly speaking, it was just the start. But the fact that Lee Hyunsung could use Great Mountain Smash would quickly enhance the power of the party.

"Hyunsung-ssi, how many more times can you use it?"

"...Probably once or twice more."

Lee Hyunsung was gasping for breath and obviously quite worn out.

It was natural. The Great Mountain Smash stigma was an ultimate skill that consumed a tremendous amount of stamina and magic power. There weren't many skills that exceeded Great Mountain Smash when it came to pure physical force among the physical reinforcement type skills.

The group of people scattered all over the place seemed to be running in this direction. I asked Yoo Sangah who was running in the front.

“Was there anywhere you couldn’t break?”

“I broke both of them!”

“I didn’t realize the rooms could be broken like this. We banged hard on the ground together and it smashed...”

Jung Heewon followed.

Yoo Sangah, Jung Heewon and Lee Gilyoung took out the small green zones. Most of the green zones fit three or fewer people, apart from Gong Pildu’s green zone. There was some was an ambiguous scale but there was a separate person handling those.

[Hey! Can’t you hear me? What are you going to do now?]

On the other hand, Bihyung was still shouting across the ‘dokkaebi communication’.

‘What are you worried about?’

[Have you forgotten? I’m don’t have the only channel in Chungmuro. Do you really not know what will happen if you do this?]

Of course I knew. Maybe the constellations in the channel with Gong Pildu would be in a frenzy right now.

‘What channel is Gong Pildu in?’

[...Biryu’s channel. BIR-3642.]

‘Biryu is the one who came while you were busy for a bit?’

[That’s right. That asshole.]

‘How is his subscription configured?’

[It is the flagship channel for the ‘finding amusement’ group.]

The dokkaebis whose main purpose was to find amusement. That’s why their broadcasts were radical. Great. Then the response within the channel would be much hotter than expected. Everyone would’ve eaten the sweet potatoes properly.

I headed down the stairs of the transfer corridor to line 4 and saw a welcome face. The blade was moving through the air.

“You broke them?”

“Yes. It was easy.”

Lee Jihye’s role was to take out the green zones that contained five to eight people. It was a task that Jung Heewon would find hard to do alone. Indeed, she was Yoo Jonghyuk’s disciple and was the incarnation of the sage hero. Now there were no more green zones left in Chungmuro.

“Now what? Those jerks will come running wildly. Ah, there they are.”

Lee Jihye’s expression twisted as she looked behind me.

“I’m not going to help you this time.”

“I don’t need it.”

Jung Heewon scowled as she watched Lee Jihye retreating.

“What is with her?”

Come to think of it, Jung Heewon didn’t know about Lee Jihye. But there was no time to tell her.

[Haha... you are fucked now.]

A message was heard along with Bihyung’s words.

[A bounty scenario has occurred!]

+

[Bounty Scenario – Assassination Commission]

Category: Sub

Difficulty: C

Clear Conditions: The constellations of Channel #BIR-3642 have requested to kill a certain person. Please kill ‘Kim Dokja’ of Chungmuro Station.

Time Limit: 10 minutes.

Compensation: 2,000 coins.

Failure: None

+

I thought this situation would unfold. It was going to be a lot of fun. Now all the incarnations in the region would gather on the platform of line 3 to catch me. Jung Heewon asked by his side.

“I will receive 2,000 coins if I kill Dokja-ssi right now?”

“Why, are you going to kill me?”

“Aye, perhaps. If you give me 200,000 coins then I don’t know.”

Does this girl know how much 200,000 coins were worth?

“Dokja-ssi. Go behind me.”

Lee Hyunsung stepped out ahead of me. Jung Heewon stayed beside me while Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung moved to block any access. It was a defense formed around me. Jung Heewon smiled.

“Now I can pay back my debt.”

“Dokja-ssi, we’ll try to block it somehow.”

There were people showing hostility around us. The angry landowners and the tenants were blinded by the bounty quest. I watched Lee Gilyoung holding the weapon and opened my mouth.

“Don’t be nervous.”

I lightly stroked Lee Gilyoung’s shoulder and moved towards the railway tracks.

“We don’t have to fight them.”

It was a few turns. I had read about such a scene. I didn’t have time to check which regression it was but Yoo Jonghyuk had destroyed the green zones as soon as he arrived at Chungmuro.

Even then, it was like the current situation.

[All green zones in this region have been destroyed and the main scenario has collapsed.]

[The difficulty is automatically adjusted according to the remaining schedule of the scenario.]

[The scenario content is updated!]

+

[Main Scenario #3 – Emergency Defense]

Category: Main

Difficulty: B-

Clear Conditions: All the green zones in the region are destroyed and the monsters that were going to be created in the remaining days have suddenly run wild. Survive against the flood of monsters for the remaining time.

Duration: 8 hours.

Compensation: 1,000 coins.

Failure: —

+

Originally, there were three days remaining in the scenario.

Now the monsters supposed to be created during the remaining time of the green zone scenario would emerge all at once. In other words, it was simple.

[The emergency defense has begun!]

The defense game had started.

“W-What?”

The people approaching me started screaming. The cries of monsters were heard from outside the screen door. The feast of monsters moved like an angry wave.

“Crazy! What the hell is this?”

The platform of line 3 quickly became a mess. The faces of the people became speculative as they watched the monsters coming from all sides. The bounty scenario was completely forgotten about.

Grrrrr!

A few grolls ran and bit some of the alliance members. The upset people were shouting.

Now was the only chance. I shouted to my party.

“Go to the transfer route!”

I started jumping up the transit stairs with my friends. By the time we reached the upper level, people were blocking the path.

“What? Get out of the way!”

“Do you want to fall?”

I kicked some of the followers and pulled out a blade. The people were surprised by the White Pure Star Energy blade and backed away.

“You haven’t grasped the situation yet.”

“W-What?”

“Even if you come up, you won’t be able to survive.”

There was a sense of despair in the expressions of the people. There were no more rooms. Now there were no more safe zones from the monsters in Chungmuro.

“What should we do?”

“What else? Fight.”

“Don’t speak crazy words! This is all because of you! If you hadn’t broken our rooms...!”

I triggered the Blade of Faith and used it on the transfer stairs.

Kwarurung!

“Uwaaaaack!”

The centre of the staircase fell with a large sound, along with the people. It was cruel but necessary.

“Crazy! Quickly find another staircase! Quickly!”

Well, I don’t think it would happen.

Lee Hyunsung was already running. I smashed the transit stairs we came up on and there was only one staircase remaining. Subsequently, the sound of arguing and something breaking was heard on the other side.

“Shit! Waaah!”

The cries of the people trapped on the platform of line 3 were heard. Lee Jihye approached me and asked.

“Ahjussi. This isn’t what you told me. If you leave it like this...”

“I know.”

I looked at the lower floor that was becoming pandemonium. If I left it like this, they would all be killed. Whether it was from the monsters or using each other’s bodies as a stepping stone to come upstairs.

This wasn’t what I wanted.

[The exclusive skill ‘Bookmark’ can now be activated.]

[Character Bookmarks’ is activated.]

[Available Bookmark Slots: 3]

[Bringing up the list of available bookmarks.]

[People Listed in the Bookmark Slots]

1. The Delusion Demon Kim Namwoon (Understanding 35).
2. Steel Sword Lee Hyunsung (Understanding 65).
3. Demagogue Cheon Inho (Understanding 20).

I activated the third bookmark.

[The number three bookmark has been activated.]

[The level of the Bookmark skill is low, shortening the activation time.]

[Activation Time: 5 minutes.]

[Your understanding of the character is low, so only a part of the character's skill is activated.]

[Incite Lv.2 has been activated.]

Suddenly, it felt like my tongue was coming alive on its own. This was how Cheon Inho felt. I looked downstairs. In the middle of the mess, I could see a middle-aged man.

"Hey Gong Pildu. How long are you going to stand there?"

Gong Pildu glared at me.

"This dog...!"

"Don't you have to act in order to live? If you move, everyone else can live."

The power of Incite permeated the ears of all the frightened people.

"P-Pildu-ssi!"

"P-Pildu-ssi, please save us!"

Gong Pildu's expression distorted. I felt good. This was what Cheon Inho would've felt at Gumho Station.

"The third scenario isn't as hard as you think. Once everyone gives up on the rooms and participates in the defense, there are enough people to handle the monsters."

My words were half true. If Chungmuro had united before I arrived here, there would be far less victims. After all, the biggest pitfall of this scenario was the green zone.

"If Gong Pildu fights with the people, you can survive."

Those who fight together would survive, those who ran away would die.

[The sponsor behind Lee Jihye agrees with your wisdom.]

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' nods his head.]

"Now there are no rooms for you to run away to. Forget about whether you are a landlord or tenant and fight. Or you will all die."

The more urgent the situation was, the more the effect of Incite would increase.

“Damn, this fucking guy...!”

“Pildu-ssi! Please help us!”

The alliance members gathered around Gong Pildu. If he ran away here alone, Gong Pildu’s Landlord Alliance would collapse. In the end Gong Pildu made his decision.

“Dammit... Everybody gather here!”

The people downstairs started gathering around Gong Pildu.

“I need time to install a new Armed Zone. Everybody just hang on!”

The key was Gong Pildu’s Armed Zone. However, the weak point was that Armed Zone took time to install every time it moved.

Blood splattered everywhere and people screamed as their limbs were torn off.

“Aaaagh!”

As expected, the first ones who abandoned the formation were the tenants, not the alliance members.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi.”

“Yes. Please leave it to me.”

I didn’t need to explain it. Yoo Sangah already understood what she needed to do.

Her Binding Thread stretched out and started to rescue the people who couldn’t fight anymore. In any case, their mission was to buy time for Gong Pildu to deploy Armed Zone.

“U-Uhh... t-thank you.”

The tenants hung from the threat and were pulled upstairs.

The rescued tenants were shaking as they wrapped up their injured area. In the

meantime, some of the people with weapons carefully looked at me. I smiled at them and said.

“Oh, do you want the bounty?”

[The time limit for the bounty scenario has expired.]

[The bounty hanging on Kim Dokja has been destroyed.]

“Sorry, it is too late.”

“I-I’m sorry.”

The tenants seemed ashamed as they put away their weapons. I heard Gong Pildu’s voice roaring from the bottom.

“Out of the way!”

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ has used Armed Zone Lv. 3!]

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ has activated ‘Armed Zone Lv. 4!]

There was a mechanical sound as five turrets rose from the ground. The red magic bullets condensed in a short time and started firing.

Dududududu!

Kwang! Kwaang! Kwaang!

The ground rats screamed as they were hit by the bombardment of magic bullets while the grolls came to a halt. The group of people cried out.

“As expected of Pildu-ssi!”

“Wahhhh!”

It was truly Gong Pildu. In a defense type scenario, there was no incarnation that surpassed a player’s combat effectiveness.

The 10 Evils weren’t called that for nothing.

“All of you damn scum disappear!”

The agitated Gong Pildu randomly fired. Lee Hyunsung spoke with admiration.

“It is a really tremendous stigma. Is it okay when the magic power consumption is so big?”

“It is a good stigma so it will be okay for a while.”

“Should we help...?”

“Gong Pildu alone is sufficient. If we do down then he will be distracted and stop shooting.”

The Defense Master sponsor behind Gong Pildu was completely suited for this type of scenario. As long as he supported Gong Pildu, Gong Pildu wouldn't die here. As long as the sponsorship continued.

I sat down and stretched out my legs.

“We will be sucking honey for a while.”

“...Is it time for personal maintenance already?”

Lee Hyunsung sat down with me and the party members started to relax one by one. Jung Heewon asked.

“Thank you. I didn't get enough sleep... can I sleep now?”

“Yes.”

10 minutes later, Jung Heewon was lying on the ground and snoring. I said yes but I really didn't know how she could sleep so easily.

“A-Aren't we too easygoing?”

Yoo Sangah sounded concerned. Indeed, it would be confusing. There wasn't a 'scenario' like this so far. In fact, all we did was survive the brink of a crisis.

“Think of it as standing on the right line.”

“Then over there...”

“They got the wrong line.”

The confusion on the lower level had almost died down because of Gong Pildu.

Dududududu!

“Uwaaaaah!”

He should’ve lived a better life.

“Fuck! Fuuuuuckers!”

In the midst of the endless procession of monsters, Gong Pildu’s screams echoed.

Chapter 35

Emergency Defense (4)

One hour after the battle began, Gong Pildu fought and fought. The number of monsters had barely decreased but it was still great. Gong Pildu was considered to have the strongest defense among the 10 Evils for a reason.

“You scum!”

[The character Gong Pildu’s Armed Zone has levelled up.

[The character Gong Pildu’s Private Land has levelled up!]

[The character Gong Pildu has acquired the Protective Wall skill.]

The level up speed of Armed Zone was fast. The sponsor behind Gong Pildu was rushing to support his growth. If he could survive here, Gong Pildu’s growth would be enormous.

As long as he could survive here.

“Uhweeeh...!”

According to the scenario, Gong Pildu had to hold on for seven more hours. It would’ve been nice if I had popcorn. Too bad.

Lee Jihye was giggling next to me as she watched the bottom floor. She told me earlier that I should save them... it was truly a transformation in the disposition of Yoo Jonghyuk’s disciple.

“By the way, why isn’t Yoo Jonghyuk here?”

“How should I know? Master is always busy.”

Busy... yes, he might be busy. The person trying to be all alone was the busiest.

I looked down at the dying Gong Pildu as I asked, “What time did Yoo Jonghyuk enter the dungeon?”

“It is roughly 9 a.m. today...” Lee Jihye stopped speaking and stared at me. “...Wait a minute, how do you know that Master entered a dungeon?”

I ignored Lee Jihye and calculated the time. Now it was 8 p.m. Using simple calculations, it had already been over 11 hours since Yoo Jonghyuk entered. Yet he still hadn't come out...

Damn, I had to move. Yoo Jonghyuk was the main character and it would be difficult if something happened to him.

I opened the dokkaebi communication.

‘Bihyung.’

Bihyung floating in the air turned to look at me.

[What is it? Calling me so suddenly.]

‘Open the Dokkaebi Bag.’

[What? N-No! I am currently getting a lot of subscriptions!]

I know. My stock price was rising due to my actions with Gong Pildu. My actions of laying a trap and then sitting back meant the constellations of the ‘fun seekers’ group wouldn't still be on the channel which Gong Pildu belonged to.

Where would the constellations go after leaving the channel?

[New constellations have entered the channel!]

It was naturally Bihyung's channel.

[#BI-7623 channel is ready for an expansion.]

[Huhu, huhuhut, look at this, look at this! Now my channel is also...!]

It wasn't unreasonable for Bihyung to be acting like this. But this wasn't the time for amusement.

‘If you don't want your channel to be ruined, open it quickly. You can see that there

will be an advertisement in preparation for the channel expansion.'

[Ah, shit... really...]

Bihyung grumbled but opened the Dokkaebi Bag after showing an advertisement. It was finally time to use the coins I had saved.

'I'll give you 5,000 coins. Upgrade me to a gold member.'

Bihyung stared at me quietly and sighed. It was followed by system messages.

[5,000 coins have been consumed.]

[Congratulations! You have become a gold member of the Dokkaebi Bag!]

My member rating changed and the background of the Dokkaebi Bag also changed. Coins were really good. New item listings were added. I put the necessary items into the shopping cart.

* Behind the Scenes Contract – 10,000 C.

* Intermediate Magic Power Recovery Potion X 10 – 5,000 C.

One contract and 10 intermediate potions... this should be enough.

The spending was a bit big but the channel was going to be expanded. It wouldn't be long before I recovered it. Bihyung was nervous when he saw the items I bought.

[...Why is there a contract? Have you already forgotten the terms? You can't have a sponsor!]

'What do you mean? Why would I get a sponsor now?'

Even if I was doing that, why would I buy the contract with my own coins? At any rate, this Bihyung still needed a lot of work.

[15,000 coins have been consumed.]

[A 'Behind the Scenes Contract' has been acquired.]

[10 Intermediate Magic Power Recovery Potions have been acquired.]

Yoo Sangah showed curiosity when the items appeared out of thin air.

“What is that?”

“A contract to make a ‘gap’ an ‘eul.’”

I filled out the contract carefully, wrote my name in the ‘gap’ section and waited quietly. It was time for the ‘eul’ to come.

[The sponsor for character ‘Gong Pildu’ is asking for help from nearby constellations.]

Finally, the sponsor behind Gong Pildu reached his limits and started sending messages outside the channel. It was natural since the sponsor didn’t have many coins in the first place. Not everybody was rich just because they were a constellation.

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ scoffs.]

The other constellations in Gong Pildu’s channel would’ve stopped sponsoring and the incarnation was dying... everything was going according to plan.

Bihyung noticed something and muttered.

[Wait a minute, surely you aren’t...]

I talked towards Gong Pildu, who was in a half dead state.

“Hey, you over there.”

Dududududu! Gong Pildu fired crazily and looked up at me while breathing heavily.

“Will you die like this or will you sign a contract with me?”

“W-What...?”

“I’m not a constellation so I can’t be a sponsor. But if you want, I can be a person behind the scenes. How about it?”

“What is this bastard talking about...?”

“Gong Pildu, shut up. I’m not talking to you.”

“What...?”

I waved the 'contract' in one hand and the 'Intermediate Magic Power Recovery Potion' in the other hand.

"Answer quickly. I will give these items to you if you sign with me."

A message window flashed in front of me.

[The sponsor behind character 'Gong Pildu' has revealed himself.]

[The constellation 'Defense Master' is looking at you like you are crazy.]

Indeed. He wasn't yet ready to be an 'eul.' Don't worry. He would be in a hurry as time passed.

Bihyung was watching me.

[You... are you crazy?]

'This one as well.'

[You are the first to try and support a constellation.]

'I can't do it?'

[This is a constellation! Will it sign with an insignificant human?]

'That is just your thoughts.'

The intermediate constellation, Defense Master. He was a low level constellation compared to his ability.

His world had long become a 'scenario' and was completely destroyed. Therefore, the Defense Master's myth was no longer discussed. The myth had disappeared and the constellation couldn't get coins. One day, even his existence would disappear.

That's why some constellations, including the Defense Master' were obsessed with looking for an 'incarnation'. The constellations were remembered in the world through their chosen incarnation.

'That guy, he doesn't have any coins left.'

[What?]

Gong Pildu's power had fallen sharply compared to before. Unlike the 'Monarch of the Small Fries', the Defense Master was someone who cared about his incarnation. The fact that Gong Pildu was going to die meant he had run out of coins.

It was obvious but without coins, a new 'sponsor contract' was impossible. Then what happened to a constellation who couldn't create a new incarnation?

'Once Gong Pildu dies, that guy will be forgotten.'

For a constellation, being forgotten meant death.

Faint fear filled Bihyung's eyes.

[You are...?]

Gong Pildu was a great card if I could afford it. Even Yoo Jonghyuk had attempted to subjugate Gong Pildu several times in countless regressions. Of course, he had never been successful.

Yoo Sangah spoke.

"Dokja-ssi, that person will die."

Gong Pildu was biting his lips so hard that blood was flowing. Now there were only two mini-turrets left in Armed Zone. It was time to end this.

[The constellation 'Defense Master' is wondering about the contents of the contract.]

He was coming. Bihyung's eyes widened at the sight in front of him.

[...Really? No, is this real?]

I showed the contract immediately.

[The constellation 'Defense Master' has started reading the contract.]

Gong Pildu, who was shedding blood on the lower floor, suddenly shouted. He had probably heard a message from his sponsor.

“W-What? What is this message?”

What? He was being sold.

“W-What is going on Pildu-ssi?”

[The constellation ‘Defense Master’ is asking for some time to think.]

After a while, I heard some good news.

[The constellation ‘Defense Master’ as added a condition to the contract.]

[If you agree with this condition, the constellation ‘Defense Master’ will agree to contract with you.]

I immediately read the contract.

.....

14. Incarnation Kim Dokja (Gap) recognizes the property rights of Constellation Defense Master (Eul) and should ensure the survival of ‘Gong Pildu.’

15. Incarnation Kim Dokja (Gap) should help Constellation Defense Master (Eul) so that his private property ‘Gong Pildu’ grows well.

.....

Guaranteeing Gong Pildu’s life and his growth. In fact, this didn’t need to be included. It was natural for Gong Pildu not to die if the contract was signed. The only thing that mattered for me was the third condition.

3. Incarnation Kim Dokja (Gap) has a command authority over ‘Gong Pildu’, the private property of Constellation Defense Master (Up to 10 times a day).

I checked the contract and nodded.

“I will sign the contract.”

Before long, a faint thread connected me and Gong Pildu. Then system messages were heard.

[The contract has been completed.]

[You have become the co-sponsor of 'Gong Pildu' due to the contract.]

[Due to the contract, you have been given the right to command incarnation 'Gong Pildu.']

[The duration of the contract is five years and it won't be automatically renewed.]

Yoo Jonghyuk would be stunned if he knew that Gong Pildu could be obtained so easily. If I hadn't read to the latter half of Ways of Survival, I wouldn't have known to use the Behind the Scenes Contract this way.

I handed the recovery potions to Yoo Sangah.

"Give this to Gong Pildu. You should give him one every 40 minutes."

"...It is okay to give to him?"

She had to give it. If not, this main scenario wouldn't be cleared. Gong Pildu was confused after Yoo Sangah handed him a potion.

"What is this?"

"Drink it and fight."

Gong Pildu was suspicious for a moment but soon opened the potion's lid. Blue smoke emerged around his body and the destroyed turrets returned to their original appearance.

[The character 'Gong Pildu' has completely recovered his magic power.]

Gong Pildu wiped the potion stained lips and looked up at me.

"Stupid guy. Do you think I will forgive you because of this? Once I get out of here, it will be your end..."

"Shut up, Gong Pildu."

[Under the terms of the contract, 'Command Rights' is activated!]

"O-Oof? Oof oof oof?"

Poor guy, he didn't even know what situation he was in.

"Fight hard. Don't touch my party members."

"Hup...! Oof oof...!"

Dududududu!

Yoo Sangah's eyes widened when she saw Gong Pildu listened to my orders.

"D-Dokja-ssi? W-Why is that person...?"

"I made a 'gap' into an 'eul."

"...Did you write something?"

"Now you can rest assured about Gong Pildu."

Then the bombardment of messages from the constellations poured out.

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' finds your idea interesting.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' has dropped his stick at your strategy.]

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' thinks that you are impudent.]

.....

I had secretly signed the contract but these guys already noticed. The Defense Master was only intermediate level but he was still a constellation.

A mere human became a co-sponsor with a constellation, the impact on the constellations would be enormous. There would be a backlash among those like the Abyssal Black Flame Dragon. But.

[Many constellations are paying attention to you.]

[A number of constellations want to become your sponsor.]

The constellations who realized my value were overwhelmingly larger. If they became my sponsor, they would be able to use the power of Defense Master.

Then the owner of Gong Pildu's channel, Dokkaebi Biryu appeared in the air.

[Constellations! W-Why... are you suddenly leaving? D-Don't go! Just wait a little longer...!]

Biryu, whose channel was being ruined, made a desperate appeal. It was the dokkaebi who created the food penalty and 'survival cost' in Gumho Station.

[H-Hiiik! N-No...]

Dokkaebi Biryu gradually blurred and disappeared.

[Channel # BIR-3642 has been forced to leave after having the subscriptions reduced.]

Bihyung muttered in a trembling voice after seeing one channel falling to ruin.

[Excuse me... Dokja-nim?]

'What is it?'

[You... were you aiming for Gong Pildu from the beginning?]

I shrugged.

[Crazy... human... what human did I sign with?]

Bihyung couldn't close his mouth. I didn't care. This place was organized and I needed to move on to the next place.

I spoke to the bewildered party members who still hadn't grasped the situation.

"Everyone. I'm sorry but I have to leave for a while.'

"Huh? Now?"

"There is a place I urgently need to go to. Hyunsung-ssi and Yoo Sangah-ssi, please stay here. You don't have to do anything. Just throw Pildu a potion until the end of the scenario and relax."

Jung Heewon asked, "What about Gilyoung and I?"

"You will come with me."

“To where?”

“Um... it is hard to explain but there is a bad guy.”

“A bad guy?”

“Yes. A bad person who disappeared to eat items alone, regardless if people die or not. From now on, I am going to hit him in the back of the head.”

It was very hard. Jung Heewon thought for a moment before asking.

“...Is he worse than Gong Pildu?”

I contemplated for a moment before replying.

“He is much worse.”

“Then let’s go.”

“I’ll explain the details later.”

I moved with Jung Heewon and Lee Gilyoung. Then somebody grabbed my shoulder. It was Lee Jihye

“Wait, where are you going right now?”

In any case, this was good.

“Great. You can come along.”

“Where are you going?”

“Yoo Jonghyuk is in danger.”

Lee Jihye laughed like she thought I was joking.

“What nonsense are you saying? Master is in danger?”

My expression remained serious and Lee Jihye’s laughter soon disappeared.

“...Are you serious? No, how do you know this?”

How did I know? Perhaps I was the world’s foremost, no the second highest authority who knew her master.

I checked the time.

“That jerk, he went to the hidden dungeon at Exit 1?”

“U-Uh?”

“And it has been 11 hours since he entered?”

“Uhhh...” Lee Jihye spoke blankly.

I remembered that Yoo Jonghyuk’ had attacked Chungmuro’s ‘hidden dungeon’ a total of eight years. He failed twice and succeeded six times. The problem was that the two failures were concentrated in his early regressions. The 8th turn and the 11th turn.

During the 8th regression, Yoo Jonghyuk died in Chungmuro’s hidden dungeon.

But the current Yoo Jonghyuk was... the third turn.

“At this rate, Yoo Jonghyuk will die today.”

If my guess was right, our damn regressor would be on the ‘sunfish route’.

(TL Note: Seems to be based on the game ‘Survive! Mola Mola! where you have to make a sunfish survive troubles in the sea. But the sunfish gets started and dies because of almost anything.)

Chapter 36

Omniscient Sunfish (1)

After a while, we moved towards the entrance of the 'hidden dungeon' on the first underground floor. I walked behind Lee Jihye, Lee Gilyoung and Jung Heewon while looking at my smartphone.

"...In the midst of the splitting headache, Yoo Jonghyuk came to his senses.

'Give up on this life.'

This was the end of Yoo Jonghyuk's eighth life."

It couldn't be. This hadn't happened yet.

...Shit, why was this guy doing this on only the third life? If he moved carefully like his second life, he would've passed through the mid-to-late scenarios.

I raised my eyes to see Jung Heewon looking at me.

"Dokja-ssi, what are you looking at?"

"...Ah, the calendar... This situation has made me lose my sense of the date."

I actually thought it might be more interesting to look at the calendar. Sometimes I wondered how I finished reading this novel.

Jung Heewon looked at me suspiciously before turning her head towards Lee Jihye.

"Then... did you say your name was Jihye? Do you also use a sword?"

"Yes. I like the sword."

"Right? The sword is the best. It has a good taste."

"...Unni also knows the taste?"

Jung Heewon smiled as she watched Lee Jihye's sword. It was a luxurious sword that obviously flowed smoothly. Maybe it was given by Yoo Jonghyuk.

"Your sword looks good."

"Ah, Master gave it to me. Unni...?"

"My one... I-I like mine as well."

Jung Heewon looked down at the groll horn blade and then sneaked a peek at the sword on the other person's waist.

I didn't do anything wrong but I couldn't help feeling sorry. I had no choice but to hang something on Lee Jihye.

"Hey, why are you talking to Heewon-ssi but ignoring me?"

"Uh... that, I'm a bit weak to older females."

Lee Jihye responded with a quivering voice and Jung Heewon gave her a headlock, as if Lee Jihye was cute. There seemed to be a connection between the 'demon slayers.' Lee Jihye barely escaped from the headlock and asked.

"By the way, why are you rescuing Master?"

"We are companions."

"Don't talk nonsense."

"He is a useful guy."

"...You sound like Master."

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' is wondering about your heart.]

Come to think of it, it wasn't just Lee Jihye but the constellations as well who must be wondering about my actions. He was a guy who would kill me if he got a chance. It was strange that I would run to save him.

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' likes your desire to rehabilitate a fallen

friend.]

[100 coins have been sponsored.]

This one misunderstood me. But the Demon-like Judge of Fire... unlike the expectations of the Archangel Uriel, I had a deeply personal reason for saving Yoo Jonghyuk.

It was to prevent him from ‘regressing’ after his death.

Regression after death. It sounded good. A ‘regression stigma’ that triggered every time you died. The protagonist had a fraudulent ability.

The problem was that this ability invoked complicated thoughts in the surrounding cast.

“By the way, what happens to the world after you return?”

A supporting actor had asked this of Yoo Jonghyuk when Yoo Jonghyuk’s number of lives had broken into the double digits. I forgot his name but Yoo Jonghyuk’s answer from that time was clear.

“...I also don’t know. I always choose a world where more people can live.”

It was plausible but in fact, Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t know about the world he abandoned. In fact, there was no definite theory about what happened to the world in Ways of Survival.

Science, magic, whatever.

This was why I was anxious. What happened to the world after the regressor disappeared?

Would it reset with the regression? Or would a parallel universe branch off? The latter would be fortunate, but if it was the former...

“Hyung?”

“Ah, yes?”

Lee Gilyoung, who was holding the hem of my clothes, looked up at me with anxious eyes.

“I think we’re here?”

[You are approaching the outside region. Be careful not to leave the scenario area.]

This message popped up. It didn’t matter. Chungmuro’s hidden dungeon was treated as an ‘inside’ area.

We turned the corner and Exit 1 appeared. A dungeon entrance with an ominous shade greeted us.

[You have found a hidden dungeon!]

[This dungeon has already been discovered by someone. You can’t get the first discovery achievement.]

[A new hidden scenario has arrived!]

+

[Hidden Scenario – Theatre Dungeon]

Category: Hidden

Difficulty: A-

Clear Conditions: Defeat the master of Theatre Dungeon.

Time Limit: None

Compensation: 4,000 coins

Failure: —

+

The surprised Lee Jihye hesitated and stepped back.

“...What is this? Theater Dungeon?”

Lee Gilyoung looked startled. Well, this must be the first time they encountered a hidden scenario. Jung Heewon also spoke.

“A movie theatre as a dungeon... it sounds romantic.”

Romantic. This was only because she didn’t know how scary the movie theatre could be. We entered the theatre. The familiar lobby of the multiplex welcomed us.

[You have entered Theatre Dungeon.]

We were tense as we entered the bleak dungeon. It was a multiplex consisting of nine

floors, from B1 to the 8th floor.

“Hyung, the posters are torn. Who would do that?”

“I’m not sure.”

I said this but I actually knew the truth.

The core of this ‘Theatre Dungeon’ were the ‘posters’ on the wall. Perhaps Yoo Jonghyuk defeated every poster as he went upstairs. His intentions were to sweep up all the rewards.

Except for the torn posters, nothing strange was found on B1. There were no items and no monsters. The only exception was the smashed elevator in one corner with a distorted door.

Lee Jihye asked.

“Isn’t this a dungeon? Why isn’t there anything?”

“Something will appear.”

“...Do you know something?”

“A little.”

“How? Something is fishy about Ahjussi. Is this your second life?”

That was her master. But he had lived three times.

Then Jung Heewon said, “It is due to the sponsor behind Dokja-ssi.”

“...Really?”

I ignored the two women and tried to move to the ground floor when I was caught by Lee Gilyoung. The cockroach on his head was moving wildly. Lee Jihye drew her sword at almost the same moment I covered her mouth with a hand.

“Shhh, there is somebody else besides us.”

I breathed out while small sounds started to be heard. Just upstairs. Then... the lobby? I first thought it was Yoo Jonghyuk but it wasn't Yoo Jonghyuk's voice.

"...Are you sure? Here... there are a bunch of things."

"Yes. I bought the information with 1,000 coins."

"The prophets?"

"Yes. They are disgusting but the information is obvious."

I heard the sound of people talking. We went up the escalator and approached them. It seemed that four people were gathered in the lobby on the 1st floor.

Lee Jihye whispered, "Who are they? I never once saw their faces in Chungmuro."

"Maybe they came from the ground side entrance."

"Ground side? Isn't that filled with poisonous fog? Furthermore, the scenario—"

"Different stations have different scenarios at different speeds. There are those who have finished the scenario faster than our station. If there is a weak poisoning, they can eat the meat from the underground species."

I said this but I was confused.

'Prophets?'

There was no information about such people in Yoo Jonghyuk's life. At this point, Yoo Jonghyuk and I should be the only ones who knew about the hidden dungeon.

What caused the variables? Needless to say, I needed to find out.

"Then let's go inside."

A blue spotlight was floating above the men talking. A bright light surrounded them and then they disappeared.

"...What happened to them?"

Jung Heewon asked me but I didn't answer. Instead, I was searching the posters on the wall. This was torn, that as well... by the time I reached the end of the wall, only one wasn't torn. I read the words written on the poster.

Steven Spielberg, Samuel L Jackson, Jeff Goldblum...

That bastard Yoo Jonghyuk... he left this one alone? As expected from the third regression.

At that moment, the light came on again. This time, the spotlight was aimed on us. The surprised Lee Jihye and Lee Gilyoung stepped back, but there was no way to avoid it. The word 'ray' suited it.

I asked Jung Heewon, "Heewon-ssi likes movies?"

"Of course. Do you usually like it?"

"You might hate it after this."

"What do you—"

[You have been hit by a projection light.]

[The screening will begin.]

The surrounding landscape started to slowly change. It wasn't a simple illusion so Fourth Wall wasn't activated as before. The old linoleum floor became covered with green bushes, while the reception desk and popcorn stand turned into a lush rainforest. The ceiling turned into a blue sky with no clouds and no end in sight. Lee Ji-hye muttered in a small voice.

"Where the hell is this place?"

Lee Jihye shouted and hacked at the surrounding trees and bushes, but nothing changed. Lee Gilyoung started looking for insects with a calm expression.

I tried to touch the nearby trees. It had a hard and moist texture. It was a real rainforest from the Mesozoic era. This was a different realism from the specter's Welcome Prison. This was the power of the theatre master on the dungeon's 8th floor.

"It is a movie."

“...Really ridiculous things are happening.”

A novel had become reality. There was no law that a movie couldn't become reality as well.

Jung Heewon was a fast adaptor and quickly understood.

“Ahjussi, what movie is this?”

“You'll know soon.”

“...Can't you just let me know? Wait a minute, what is this kid doing...?”

At this moment, the shrubbery moved and something jumped out in front of Lee Gilyoung. An insect that resembled a giant preying mantis. The size was approximately 40cm. Lee Jihye was terrified and cried out.

“Hey Kid! Back away!”

However, Lee Gilyoung responded calmly to the fuss.

“It isn't a preying mantis. It is a Titanoptera from the Triassic period.

“What?”

Lee Gilyoung stretched out his hand to the titano. The insect didn't refuse the touch and after a moment, Lee Gilyoung and the insect's body was wrapped in a blue light.

Lee Jihye watched with a stupid expression.

“This... what?”

“Fabre.”

It really was good that I brought Lee Gilyoung. This guy's ability might allow us to pass through the gateway more easily.

The giant preying mantis moved its big mouth and Lee Gilyoung nodded. I didn't know what it involved but they were having a conversation. After a while, Lee Gilyoung paled as he talked to the preying mantis.

...What was it?

Lee Gilyoung hurriedly turned to me.

“Hyung!”

As he spoke, the sound of the earth shaking was heard. It seemed that something was coming at a tremendous speed, smashing the huge palm trees.

Kuoooooh!

The muzzle of the giant reptile that appeared through the rainforest was covered with reddish blood. Some bloody men were running in front of it. It was the men who entered before us.

“Kuaaack!”

“S-Save me!”

Lee Jihye stepped back and spoke to Jung Heewon.

“I know what movie this is.”

“...Yes, me too.”

A body that was over a dozen metres tall and hard skin. Fierce muscles dominated the entire body. The strongest predator of the Mesozoic Era was in front of us.

At first glance, it was similar to a grade 7 monster. The difficulty level was atrocious considering this was the 1st floor of the dungeon. But my heart just thumped. The harder the hidden dungeon, the better the reward.

I pulled out a blade and said, “Get ready to fight.”

Maybe Yoo Jonghyuk skipped only this movie because of the contents. The main reward of Theater Dungeon was related to the movie contents. Yoo Jonghyuk probably thought there weren’t any worthy rewards in a movie where dinosaurs appeared. But he didn’t know.

In this movie, a really important reward was hidden.

“...Are you serious? We are going to fight that?”

“We need to beat it to make an exit.”

“The exit?”

“It is a long movie. Have you forgotten?”

A T-rex was approaching quickly. The island’s central laboratory was seen behind it. And an escape helicopter was on the rooftop of the laboratory.

This was a movie. A movie that the master of Theater Dungeon made into reality.

Therefore, there was only one way to escape from here.

“Let’s make a great ending.”

Chapter 37

Omniscient Sunfish (2)

The moment the yellow eyes looked at us, a deafening roar echoed in our ears.

Kuoooooh!

[The 7th grade, Tyrannosaurus Rex has recognized you.]

[The ‘Tyrannosaurus Rex’ has triggered the ‘Fear the Predator’ skill!]

[The exclusive skill Fourth Wall has blocked the effect of the ‘Fear the Predator’ skill.]

My mind was calm thanks to Fourth Wall, but I could stop the chills that occurred. This was the fear towards a predator.

“Everyone, get out of the way!”

The petrified Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye regained their spirits. I fell back with Lee Gilyoung beside me.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa!

A long tail flew through the forest in front of us.

“Kuaaack!”

The men who were running fell on the backs and coughed up blood. Fortunately, Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye were away from the danger zone.

I shouted to Lee Gilyoung lying down next to me.

“Gilyoung fall back, while Heewon-ssi and Jihye-ssi scatter to the left and right!”

Then a message popped up.

[The character ‘Lee Gilyoung’ has activated the ‘Dinosaur Book’ skill!]

...Huh?

“Tyrannosaurus are agile compared to their size, but they are vulnerable due to their narrow field of view.”

“...What?”

“I saw it in a book when I was a child.”

“When you were a child?”

“...Younger than I am now.”

I stared blankly at Lee Gilyoung. This wasn't the time to tackle it.

Kuoooooh!

[The exclusive skill 'White Pure Star Energy' has been activated.]

I started waving the iridescent blade to attract the attention of the T-Rex. Lee Jihye and Jung Heewon weren't tankers. I didn't even need to mention Lee Gilyoung. Therefore, I was the only one who could take the risk here.

“While I draw its attention, attack its rear—”

I hadn't finished talking when I saw Lee Jihye and Jung Heewon already at the T-Rex's rear. They noticed quickly.

Kuoooooh!

I barely avoided the incoming teeth and the stomping legs. Before I could wield Unbroken Faith, its tail passed over my head. An electrifying thrill swept over my body. I wouldn't die because my stamina was over level 20, but it was dizzying.

Maybe I had been lucky until now. I might be the 'sunfish' rather than Yoo Jonghyuk.

Sukak! Supaak!

Meanwhile, Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye was steadily dealing damage from the rear. It was a combination of 'Sword Training' and 'Kendo.' Noticeable sword wounds were

being dealt to the T-Rex's big legs. If this continued, it might take some time but the T-Rex would be defeated.

"Hyung! I'll draw its attention!"

The boy didn't listen to me about staying in the rear.

"No, Gilyoung you—"

"I can do it!"

All of a sudden, Lee Gilyoung came forward and started to make an unknown signal. I wanted to say something. Then a huge praying mantis came from somewhere, stabbed the T-Rex's eyes and fled. It was the Titano that Lee Gilyoung had been talking to before.

Kuoooooh!

The T-Rex's eyes moved confusedly as it followed the praying mantis that disturbed its vision. Lee Gilyoung used dazzling hand movements to control the praying mantis. I looked at Lee Gilyoung with a fresh mindset.

Wasn't this guy actually a hugely fraudulent character? No wonder why Yoo Jonghyuk coveted him.

Kuwooooh!

Thanks to Lee Gilyoung's success, the battlefield quickly became advantageous. The T-Rex's movements became duller while a red light shone in Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye's eyes.

[Demon Slayer].

It made them vulnerable to mental attacks but it was a good skill that made them stronger when they were excited. The sight of the two women's eyes burning as they watched the rainforest was truly spectacular.

It was a pity that I had lost Lee Jihye to Yoo Jonghyuk. However, Jung Heewon also had overwhelming growth potential. Judge of Destruction was a good attribute and she didn't have a sponsor yet.

It felt like the T-Rex's stamina had decreased considerably. It was time to deal the final blow.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

I started to focus my remaining magic power. I didn't have a sponsor, nor was I as fast as Jung Heewon or Lee Jihye. But that didn't mean my attack power was weak. I had a fraudulent system that overcame all of this.

Kuoooooh!

Ether Blade.

[The special option of Unbroken Faith is activated.]

[The ether property is converted to 'fire.']

An enormous amount of magic power was sucked in and my physical fatigue became extreme. But I didn't mind because there was a way to supplement it later.

The blade increased by one metre and was surrounded by flames.

I ran to the rear of the Tyrannosaurus.

"Everybody out of the way!"

The moment that the Tyrannosaurus hesitated and its movements slowed, I climbed its tail. I almost fell over a few times because I didn't have the 'Sense of Balance' but I somehow held on by stabbing the blade into the epidermis.

Kuoooooh!

The T-Rex poured out blood and its body rolled across the ground. I rammed the blade in wherever I could. Flames poured into the wounds caused by the blade.

The yellow eyes of the T-Rex stared at me as it gasped painfully, before finally dying.

[You have succeeded in being the first to hunt the 7th grade species 'Tyrannosaurus Rex!']

[You have obtained 1,000 coins as compensation.]

“Ah... we really got it.”

“I knew we could do it.”

Jung Heewon breathed heavily as she spoke with a proud expression on her face. She could be proud because the T-Rex was top-ranked among the 7th grade monsters. Lee Jihye belatedly rushed towards me.

“I had it!”

“What? It would’ve taken a long time if you continued hitting it like that.”

I wiped off my sword while speaking. Jung Heewon asked.

“But was a Tyrannosaurus killed in this movie?”

“No but isn’t this more fun?”

“...Huh?”

“The genre is fantasy, action and adventure. This should be enough.”

At this moment, a system message flashed in my head.

[The theater owner is satisfied with the changed ending of the movie.]

Jung Heewon screamed like it was absurd.

“Eek?”

Yes. The strategy of Theatre Dungeon wasn’t to see the ‘real ending.’

If so, Yoo Jonghyuk wouldn’t have been able to beat this dungeon. It was to create the desired ending for the ‘theatre master’ at the core of this dungeon. Please note that the theatre owner was an extreme psychopath.

“Do you understand now? We just need to smash it.”

In other words, if we removed all the obstacles to the ending, the movie would end naturally.

[Now you can move to the next floor.]

[Go to the helipad on top of the research laboratory.]

“We will move in a little while. We have to get some rewards.”

I started exploring the area around the T-Red. Soon after, I found one of the guys who entered before us. The rest were eaten or mutilated by the T-Rex.

“Hey, wake up.”

“U-Uwooh...”

Blood was constantly flowing from the man. The wounds were from the T-Rex’s claws. The bones were revealing, making it obvious that this person couldn’t recover.

“Breathe slowly.”

“C-Cough!... Alive...”

I fed the man drinking water I had brought in. The man drank some water before coughing up blood again. I was forced to urgently ask him questions.

“How did you come here?”

“P-Prophet...”

“Who are the prophets?”

The man’s breathing was getting rougher.

“R-Revelation... received...”

...Revelation?

“I want to... live...”

Blood burst out from the man’s mouth. He finally died. Jung Heewon and the others came up behind me.

“That person...?”

I shook my head and looked down at the fallen man.

‘Revelation.’ What funny bullshit.

As far as I knew, only Anna Croft had the ability of ‘Future Sight’ in Ways of Survival.

Then there was only one answer.

...There was someone else besides me. But they didn’t know as much as I did. The proof was that they didn’t dare come here in person to test out the information.

“Dokja-ssi?”

“Take a break.”

We covered the man’s body with a large lead and gathered near the dad T-Rex. We had to hurry to pursue Yoo Jonghyuk. But if we didn’t get enough rest, the party would be wiped out before we met him.

I searched the T-Rex’s body.

I looked at the head and heart but unfortunately, I couldn’t find any monster cores. That didn’t mean there was no income. Jung Heewon drooled as she watched the T-Rex being cooked over the fire.

“...Can we eat this?”

“We can eat it because it is cooked with magic flames. The unripe parts can be cooked with the Magic Power Stove.”

We sat side by side around the T-Rex’s leg. As we cut the cooked flesh of the T-Rex little by little, steam rose. Lee Gilyoung shouted.

“Fresh meat!”

Lee Jihye hurriedly rushed up and grabbed a piece first. The rest of the group, including myself, also picked large pieces of flesh. Meat of this size? It was a luxury that couldn’t be dreamt of back when I was an office worker. Lee Jihye closed her eyes while enjoying the taste. Then she murmured in an ecstatic voice.

“Ah, the best taste in the world...”

It really was delicious.

The fat was properly wrapped around the muscles, making it different from the ground rats. The feeling every time I took a bit... If Yoo Sangah was here, she would've cried.

After I consumed the meat, I felt my stamina recovering. The meat of an advanced species had these special effects. However, caution was required in some cases. Jung Heewon sighed.

“Phew... I ate well. It is really delicious but I will cry if I eat anymore.”

We had a moderate rest and then headed straight to the laboratory in the centre of the island.

We encountered several raptors on the way but they were easy after the T-Rex.

There were many flasks and ampoules in the laboratory. There were small incubators containing dinosaur embryos and blood samples collected. There was only one thing missing.

My eyes caught a few items as we entered the inner corridor.

[Stamina Enhancing Ampoule]

[Magic Power Enhancing Ampoule]

[Agility Enhancing Ampoule]

[Strength Enhancing Ampoule]

As expected, it was here. I started to pack the ampoules. Just like the Ichthyosaur's Core, these comprehensive stat growth items were available only in the early scenarios.

It wasn't just one or two ampoules. There were close to 20 bottles. If this was the case, my stats would be able to level up explosively. It was in anticipation of this hidden scenario that I saved coins instead of investing them in my stats.

These ampoules were only available when the corresponding stat was less than level 30.

“Ahjussi, what did you find now?”

...Ah, this ghost-like girl.

“What? Stamina Enhancement Ampoule?”

Lee Jihye’s eyes shone as she grabbed one ampoule.

“Are you trying to eat these alone?”

“Eat them all? Of course I will share it.”

“Unni, look at this! Ahjussi...!”

The other people in the party came closer due to the turmoil. Jung Heewon was shocked when she checked the item information.

“Oh my god... what are these items?”

“...This is a hidden scenario.”

I spoke with a bit of disgruntlement. Damn, this was a bit difficult. I didn’t catch the T-Rex alone so taking all the items pricked my conscience...

[Some constellations are displeased with the situation.]

Lee Jihye looked at the Strength Enhancement Ampoule and opened her mouth.

“Can you give me the Strength Enhancement Ampoule? I am a bit lacking in strength.”

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

It was a summary version that only contained the comprehensive stats.

[Character Summary List]

Name: Lee Jihye

Private Attribute: Scarred Sword Demon (Rare)

Exclusive Skills: Sword Training Lv. 4, Demon Slaying Lv. 1, Absolute Sense Lv. 2, Ghost Walk Lv. 2.

Stigma: Sea Battle Lv. 1, Large Army Command Lv. 1.

Overall Stats: Stamina Lv. 13, Strength Lv. 17, Agility Lv. 13, Magic Power Lv. 10.

This damn girl...

“Huh? Heewon unni, can’t I have it?”

“Um, Dokja-ssi was the one who discovered it so it is his decision...”

Frankly, it didn’t matter if the other party members received them but giving them to Lee Jihye was a bit of a waste. She was part of Yoo Jonghyuk’s group anyway.

[The constellation ‘Demon-like Judge of Fire’ expects your fairness.]

Fairness... yes, let’s pick the most unbiased game I knew.

I smiled and made a suggestion.

“How about rock paper scissors?”

“Rock paper scissors?”

“There will be one winner at the end.”

Greed filled Lee Jihye’s face.

“Okay!”

“Well... I will do what Dokja-ssi wants. But is it okay? It could be a mistake.”

“Then doesn’t that mean he is unlucky?”

Lee Jihye asked. She was excited at the thought of getting a share of the items.

“Let’s start with a Strength Enhancement Ampoule.”

I put out the Strength Enhancement Ampoule and said to Lee Jihye.

“You will face me.”

“I’m good at rock paper scissors. Will it be okay?”

“Ah, is that so?”

I smiled at Lee Jihye.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 1 has been activated!]

[The character ‘Lee Jihye’ has prepared ‘scissors.’]

Chapter 38

Omniscient Sunfish (3)

[The constellation Secretive Plotter is curious about your scam.]
[The constellations have sponsored you 200 coins.]

The winner of the rock paper scissors was decided in an instant. Lee Gilyoung's face was slightly flushed while Jung Heewon had a satisfied expression. Lee Jihye flopped to the ground with a devastated expression.

"...This is ridiculous!"

Unfortunately, I couldn't read Lee Gilyoung's mind so two ampoules went to him.

"You don't have to give it to me..."

"Take it."

He was cute. I stroked Lee Gilyoung's head.

In addition, Jung Heewon won two Stamina Enhancement Ampoules. Jung Heewon received them with a smile.

"Thank you. It was tough so far with my stamina."

It was only Lee Jihye who didn't obtain any ampoules.

"How can you beat me 18 out of 20 times? Did you cheat?"

"I am originally good at rock paper scissors."

"Are you really going to do this? Can't you give me just one..."

"You have Yoo Jonghyuk."

I ignored Lee Jihye's whines and packed the ampoules.

Jung Heewon patted the shoulder of the grouchy Lee Jihye while staring at Lee Jihye's shining sword.

"Little sister, the world has to be fair."

◇ ◇ ◇

Dudududu. There was the sound of the helicopter's propellers. Lee Gilyoung looked at the distant dinosaur island and asked, "Hyung, can't I take it to the next floor?"

The big praying mantis was sitting in Lee Gilyoung's lap and talking to Lee Gilyoung. The praying mantis rubbed its antenna against Lee Gilyoung's jaw.

"Unfortunately, you can't take it."

Lee Gilyoung's hugged the praying mantis with a sad expression.

"...Take care Titano."

Kwiiik.

He had already given it a name. Unfortunately, monsters created in Theatre Dungeon couldn't move to another floor.

However, items could be taken to other floors. For example, I had the ampoules that increased stats and the item I was now holding.

[Tyrant T-Rex's DNA Ampoule]

The golden ampoule was the most decisive reason for choosing this movie. It was an item that increased all stats by 10 for 30 minutes after ingestion. Although it had the disadvantage that it could only be used in Theatre Dungeon, it was impossible to break through the last floor of this dungeon without this item.

Especially if Yoo Jonghyuk was in the worst situation as I thought.

The praying mantis that Lee Gilyoung released flew in the air and the dark sky started to collapse.

[The first 'Ending Credit' has been reached.]

[Performers: Kim Dokja, Jung Heewon, Lee Jihye, Lee Gilyoung.]

[You have obtained 500 coins as compensation.]

I felt some dizziness and we appeared on the ground floor again. After we escaped, the movie posted on the wall was torn. It was evidence that we safely cleared it. Lee Jihye was complaining.

“Do you have to pass a few more floors like this?”

“Yoo Jonghyuk will have broken most of it so it will be faster than you think.”

We headed straight to the second floor via the escalator. From the second floor, the remaining space was narrow because it was the full-fledged theatre. Jung Heewon asked.

“There’s no change?”

No matter how long we waited, the environment on the second floor didn’t change. The camera wasn’t seen and the screening didn’t start either. Looking closer, all the posters on the second floor were torn. Lee Jihye noticed something.

“Is it only the movies whose posters are intact?”

I checked the torn posters one by one.

Pacific Rim directed by Guillermo del Toro... a giant robots righting movie? Too bad. If this had been intact then I could’ve gotten the reward of Hardened Gloves.

Inception directed by Christopher Nolan... it was good that this one was torn.

“Wow, I wanted to watch this.”

I saw the poster that Lee Jihye was looking at.

“Do you like superheroes?”

“Yes.”

“It is fortunate. Otherwise you would hate it after this.”

“...I see.”

On the torn poster, a green monster was roaring at us. We went straight up to the third floor.

“It is the same here.”

All the posters on the third floor were torn as well. Yoo Jonghyuk had properly swept through it. It was fortunate since there were a lot of dangerous movies on the third floor.

Final Destination directed by James Wan... that bastard Yoo Jonghyuk, how did he break this? This was an annihilation movie.

“We are going up faster than I expected?”

Unlike Jung Heewon’s bright voice, I was nervous every time we climbed a floor. Clearing the Theatre Dungeon required some luck. Some of the posters on each floor weren’t covered in Ways of Survival. Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t clear all movies.

There was a system message when we entered the fourth floor.

[You have entered the fourth floor.]

The spotlight poured down without giving me time to look at the posters. Jung Heewon gathered both hands together and prayed.

“Please don’t be a ghost movie...”

I glanced at Jung Heewon and she gave me an excuse.

“Ghosts can’t be killed with a sword.”

...This was the reason.

[The screening has started!]

The background changed and when we opened our eyes, a sea breeze blew on the prow of a ship.

“This...?”

Salt was felt in my mouth and the open horizon spread out before me. I was enraptured by the scenery of the sea. I had been working every day and it had been a few years since I’ve travelled anywhere.

“What is this movie?”

Next to me, Jung Heewon was wearing a full length dress.

A violin sound was heard from the inside of the cruise ship and there was the sound of excited people. It was an incredibly romantic atmosphere from a movie...

Oh, I know what this movie is.

Then Lee Jihye’s voice was heard. “Oh, accelerating all of a sudden...”

I looked back and saw that Lee Jihye was vomiting. Jung Heewon rushed over and patted her back. After vomiting for a long time, Lee Jihye said.

“Uh, I get seasick.”

“It is okay, just vomit.”

...I had wondered this since a while ago. Why did the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare choose Lee Jihye? No, I read the novel but I just didn’t want to know.

“But Unni... is this the movie? The boat that sinks.”

“It seems so.”

“Then... perhaps Unni is ‘Kate Winslet?’”

Lee Jihye looked at Jung Heewon’s dress like she was envious, then she looked at me.

“Then Ahjussi is... DiCaprio? Uwееееek!”

I felt somehow grumpy when I saw her vomiting after saying that. At this time, Lee Gilyoung emerged from behind me.

“Hyung!”

Lee Gilyoung was dressed in formal clothing. This clothing was somewhat familiar...

Anyway, everyone was gathered.

“There is no time.”

The ship was now sinking. Unfortunately, the solution to this movie didn’t appear in Ways of Survival.

How could we beat the Titanic? Was it a fight with the sea?

Lee Jihye was the first to comment.

“The ship is sinking anyway. Do we just have to sink with it?”

“That is a little...”

It was frustrating. It would’ve been better if the movie had a clear enemy to crush.

“Let’s look for the villain Hyung.”

This was Lee Gilyoung’s opinion. I didn’t know if there was an obvious villain this movie., But since I couldn’t think of anything else, I decided to follow it.

“Then let’s handle the villain.”

We started moving. By the way, who was this movie’s villain? The last time I watched the Titanic...

But I didn’t need to worry. The villain came to find us. A man in a clean suit was staring over here.

“Jack Dawson!”

Wait, Jack Dawson... the role that DiCaprio played? But the man wasn’t looking at me.

“...Me?”

...He was DiCaprio? I sighed as I looked at Lee Gilyoung.



After a while, we kidnapped a person we thought was the villain of the movie. But the theater master didn't respond. It wasn't enough to kidnap him...

I hesitated for a moment before opening my mouth.

"Then..."

"Let's kill him."

Lee Jihye pulled out her sword and pointed it. It was at a man struggling while his body was tied up.

"The theater master is a psychopath? Then isn't the answer to kill him quickly?"

I thought so as well. No, I was sure of it.

It was the answer to another movie like this in Ways of Survival. But Jung Heewon gazed at the man in horror and unexpected said,

"But... he looks like a real person."

"...Huh?"

"This is a movie but he is just like a real person."

It was surprising that Jung Heewon said this when she had been neatly subjugating the weak a few days ago. Then again, Jung Heewon had said something like this: 'I might be a killer but I don't want to become a monster.'

Lee Ji-hye asked, "Unni, what are you saying this type of sentimental thing now? You don't want to kill him?"

"No, that isn't it..."

"It is good to save people. But if this person doesn't die, we will die. We are definitely alive but this guy is just a character!"

Characters...

I felt bemused at Lee Jihye's words.

Jung Heewon looked at me. "...Do you think so?"

"Even if this guy is a 'real' person, he is still a bad guy! Why is killing him bad?"

Lee Jihye's words might be right. This guy was definitely a villain of the scenario and would do bad things. So it was okay to kill him. Funnily enough, it was the logic that Yoo Jonghyuk often spoke about in Ways of Survival.

The moment I opened my mouth, Lee Jihye hurriedly drew her sword.

"Sigh, what is this? Master could be dying right now!"

The blade descended and pierced the man's chest. Blood poured out. It was incredibly realistic. Then a system message was heard.

[The theater owner is satisfied with the changed ending of the movie.]

[The stern of the ship will lead to the next floor.]

"Look, I did it properly. Right?"

Lee Jihye shouted triumphantly.

The answer obviously wasn't wrong. The theater master acknowledged this and the constellations would give coins for our actions. We would survive with these coins.

It was a way of living that destroyed this world.

[The second 'Ending Credit' has been reached.]

[Performers: Kim Dokja, Jung Heewon, Lee Jihye, Lee Gilyoung.]

[You have obtained 500 coins as compensation.]

We weren't able to get a reward item from Titanic. Thus, we went straight to the next floor and followed the guidance of the system message.

[You have entered the fifth floor, the rewards room.]

Once we climbed the escalator, the rewards room finally showed up.

“Rewards room? It isn’t a scary movie?”

“This is an exhibition hall. It was a place they used to show original movie props.”

In fact, I knew this but I once again acted ignorant.

Various movie props appeared in glass tubes. Equipment and costumes used by the main characters of various movies, stage accessories...

The funny thing was that they were no longer props.

Jung Heewon approached a glass tube and shouted.

“Oh my god, look at this!”

[Mikazuki Munechika – Replica] A grade sword.

Jung Heewon’s eyes sparkled as she looked at the glass tube and I nodded.

“You’ve finally obtained a proper sword, Heewon-ssi.”

“Whoa...”

It was obviously a great sword at first glance. The originally groll horn knife wasn’t comparable and it wasn’t lacking when compared to Lee Jihye’s blade.

Jung Heewon started to swing the sword in his hand.

“Isn’t this amazing? It is light and moves properly!”

I had never seen Jung Heewon like this.

[The character ‘Jung Heewon’ is deeply grateful to you.]

It was nothing.

The main purpose of targeting the Theatre Dungeon was the ‘compensation’ of the fifth floor. The Theatre Dungeon was a good place to farm for items early on. In

particular, Jung Heewon would become stronger with this weapon.

[The reward items are limited to two per person.]

It wasn't a genuine 'star relic' person it was a movie prop, but the replica version had characteristics of the original item. A-grade items were close to a scam in the early stages.

By the way, Yoo Jonghyuk had already passed through here. Two items were already gone.

"Pick your items. Each one can only obtain two so choose carefully."

I told Jung Heewon to pick an item Yoo Sangah could use while I found one for Lee Hyunsung. This one seemed useable.

[Hercules' Shield- Replica] A grade shield.

Good... It was an item that couldn't be compared with the Old Iron Shield. I thought of how Lee Hyunsung's eyes would shine with loyalty towards me and already felt warm.

Lee Jihye, who claimed to be a fan of superheroes, was trying to pull an item from the corner.

"Ah, why can't I hold this?"

I came closer. This was it.

[Mjolnir – Replica] A grade blunt weapon.

The hammer of the god of lightning, Thor. It would've been an enormous item if it was a genuine star relic... still, the quality of the original was so great that the performance of the replica was significant.

I watched Lee Jihye groaning as she grabbed the hammer that couldn't be moved.

"Isn't this an item that only someone special can use?"

"Damn, I'm not special?"

At this time, Lee Gilyoung came up behind her and reached out to Mjolnir.

“Hey Kid! This is mine...”

Mjolnir was lightly lifted by Lee Gilyoung’s hands. Lee Gilyoung swung the hammer around before looking at me.

“Hyung, can I have it?”

“Yes, it looks good.”

Lee Jihye once again looked stunned.

“Only I am unhappy... just me...”

I ignored her and searched the remaining items. Let’s see what was left.

[External Reinforced Suit – Replica] A grade protective clothing.

I didn’t know what would happen in the future but it would be nice to supplement my defense. Once I wore the suit, it wrapped around my arms and legs.

[Damage from external attacks is reduced by 10%.]

[The ability to detect enemies is improved.]

[You can move more agilely than before.]

It was a bit frustrating but it was still better than not wearing it. In particular, I thought about the fight waiting at the end of this.

Now the preparations were finished.

Since there were no significant changes in the dungeon, it was clear that Yoo Jonghyuk was alive. If we moved quickly through the sixth floor, we might be able to meet on the seventh floor. In the worst case scenario, if he was fighting the boss on the eighth floor... at least he was still alive.

Now, let’s go and get our damn regressor back.

Chapter 39

Omniscient Sunfish (4)

Unfortunately, Yoo Jonghyuk wasn't on the sixth floor.

The only comfort was that the movie on the sixth floor was easy. It was a typical thriller directed by Bryan Singer. I knew the killer so it was possible to clear it quickly.

[The theater owner is satisfied with the changed ending of the movie.]
[You have obtained 500 coins as compensation.]

Lee Jihye asked as if she was dumbfounded.

"...He was really the killer?"

"Don't tell me it is a spoiler? There is actually someone here who hasn't seen it."

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' hates spoilers.]

In any case, an item was rewarded due to the movie's unique characteristics.

[Skill Book: Calm Observation.]

Calm Observation. It was quite a useful skill.

This skill allowed the user to see the movements of the target and figure out their overall stats. It didn't mean much to me since I could use Character List, but it would be quite useful for people like Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung. This skill would be good against enemies excellent at acting.

[The exclusive skill 'Calm Observation' has been acquired.]

Still, I felt a bit sad. It would be nice to experience a movie like Gladiator.

I had yet to obtain a suitable combat passive skill. He might purchase the skill Weapons Training but it wasn't a good idea to spend coins on the skill right now.

“...Now I am tired of movies.”

I agreed with Jung Heewon’s words. I didn’t want to look at a movie theatre for a while. I should just be satisfied with the high performance fee.

We went directly up to the seventh floor. Maybe this time we could see Yoo Jonghyuk’s back...

Damn. Most of the posters on the seventh floor were torn. Yes, Yoo Jonghyuk was now in the boss room. Under these circumstances, there was really no time to delay.

“Run. It is almost the last floor.”

We started to run. We had to catch up with that guy as fast as possible. Before he gave up everything.

We passed through the auditoriums and ran down the aisles. The posters on the 7th floor were of Korean movies popular in the past.

Shit, please let all of them be torn...

However, unlike what I hoped, the last poster was still intact.

“Damn...”

[The screening will begin.]

The blue spotlight covered the party and the scene changed. My head spun and a salty smell entered my nose.

The stage was the sea. But... this time it wasn’t a cruise ship. There was the smell of artillery. The rough texture of the Panokseon could be felt.

The moment I turned my head on the shaky boat, I heard someone’s voice.

“Everybody, down—!”

I reflexively fell down and there was a bombardment of gunfire around me. *Tang tang tang tang*— A few soldiers collapsed while bleeding.

“Protect the ship—!”

The soldiers dressed in old military garb were rushing around. An uneasy wind blew as war took place. The turbulent Myeongnyang Strait was swirling and there was the distant sound of drums.

Dammit.

There was no Korean who didn't know this movie. It was because this movie had been watched by most South Koreans.

Jung Heewon looked at the horizon and muttered.

“This... how can we win?”

The ending of Theater Dungeon would only open when the master was satisfied.

Kukukukung!

300 Japanese warships filled the sea. I hurriedly confirmed the power on our side. Still, this was a movie based on historical facts. There was hope.

“...What is this?”

There was only one Panokseon where there should be 12. I hurriedly grabbed one of the sailors around him and asked.

“Where is the commander?”

“Comman... der?”

“Admiral Yi!”

The navy sailor had no idea at all. My chest became cold. It was different from the movie I knew. The theatre master changed the story.

In no time, the enemy narrowed the distance. This was ridiculous. How could we win the Battle of Myeongnyang without help from the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare?

I looked around and hurriedly exclaimed.

“Lee Jihye!”

(TL: For those who won't know, this movie is The Admiral: Roaring Currents about Admiral Yi Sunshin, which broke records when it was released)

◇ ◇ ◇

I thought that this might happen. In fact, I brought Lee Jihye not just for her power but to consider the ‘what if’s.’

[The constellation ‘Maritime War God’ is sorry for Lee Jihye.]

It wasn't difficult to find Lee Jihye. There was only one boat and the place where Duke of Loyalty and Warfare's messages could be heard was limited.

“U-Uhhhh...”

She was vomiting in a corner of the first floor deck.

“Hey, are you okay?”

Lee Jihye looked up at me with moist eyes.

“I can't, I can't do it!”

This wasn't about me.

[The constellation ‘Maritime War God’ is encouraging ‘Lee Jihye’.]

“Never, I will never do it! Oof...!”

She vomited once again.

I knew. The reason why this person was chosen by Duke of Loyalty and Warfare, despite hating the sea.

[Due to the effect of your exclusive attribute, the memories from the books you have read will increase.]

In my head, a scene from the 40th chapter of Ways of Destruction passed.

““Hey, how did she get chosen by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare when she is afraid of the sea?”

“I don’t know. Um... maybe because she has the admiral in her ancestry?”

“...She is the descendent of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare?”

There was considerable criticism from a few readers apart from me who made it to the 40th chapter of Ways of Destruction.

No, did it make sense for her to have the blood of the great Duke of Loyalty and Warfare?

But I had read all the chapters except for the epilogue of Ways of Destruction so I knew. Lee Jihye wasn’t of the bloodline of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.

[The constellation ‘Maritime War God’ misses his old friend when he sees ‘Lee Jihye.’]

“Then are you a Lee from the Deoksu clan?”

“No, I am a Jeonju Lee.”“

(TL Note: As with all Korean family names, the holders of the Lee surname are divided into different lineages, known in Korean as bon-gwan, based on their ancestral seat. Most such clans trace their lineage back to a specific founder, and are generally not related to one another.)

[The constellation ‘Maritime War God’ looks at the descendant of an old friend.]

Lee Jihye was the descendant of Lee Eokgi, the companion of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare. *(Lee can also be romanized as Yi. I chose to make it Lee to match with Lee Jihye, his descendant.)*

Duke of Firmness and Compassion, Lee Eokgi.

Along with the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare, he led the navy to victory in the Battle of Tanghangpo and the Battle of Hansan-do. He was one of the few who defended the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare, Yi Sunshin when he was arrested on unfair charges. However, he didn’t have enough myths and didn’t become a sponsor.

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' is looking at 'Lee Jihye' with sad eyes.]

Due to that, the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare selected Lee Jihye.

She wasn't his descendant but the descendant of his closest confidant. Maybe it was simply the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare's choice.

Perhaps the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare didn't see it.

The fact that the descendant of his deceased confidant and friend would be killed by his own hands and become a demon.

Well... this was according to the setting of Ways of Survival.

[A bounty scenario has occurred!]

+

[Bounty Scenario – Those who seek death shall live. Those who seek life will die]

Category: Sub

Difficulty: B+

Clear Conditions: The 'Maritime War God' is asking you for help. Encourage Lee Jihye, incarnation of Duke of Loyalty and Warfare, and win the Battle of Myeongnyang.

Time Limit: 2 hours

Compensation: A stigma from the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.

Failure: —

+

I doubted my eyes for a moment.

The bounty scenarios were rarely requested by a constellation alone. I looked closely because it was strange and saw that the reward was also extraordinary.

...The stigma of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare?

If I cleared this scenario, I would be able to use one of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare's stigmas without signing a contract. I shook Lee Jihye.

"Lee Jihye, stop it. Quickly."

"I don't want to! Urgh... The three of you can handle it!"

“Can’t you endure it a little bit?”

“...Endure? Ahjussi doesn’t know.”

I didn’t know...

Yes, this was her manner of talking. However, there was no time to accept her childish actions.

“No, I know. You aren’t like this because of seasickness.”

“...What?”

“It is because your dead friend liked this movie.”

Lee Jihye shook, like a boxer hit in the jaw. It was like a scene rushing into her head. It was the first scenario at Daepo Girls’ High School. She strangled her friend with her bare hands.

“T-That... How did you...?”

“Don’t ask how I know. There is no time to explain.”

Lee Jihye looked up at me with blank eyes.

“You killed your friend with your own hands only to die like this?”

The first floor deck was pierced with a hook. I grabbed the hook shooting towards Lee Jihye with my bare hands. Lee Jihye shook as she looked at me.

“You can run away here or not. You will never be forgiven. But—”

There were loud shouts. I could hear the sound of Japanese raiders jumping on the ship.

“If you wake up now, at least you can save some people.”

I came up onto the second floor deck with the trembling Lee Jihye.

Lee Gilyoung and Jung Heewon were already surrounded. I raised my weapon. The

enemies were ordinary Japanese soldiers. We wouldn't lose in a one on one battle. The problem was that there were too many numbers.

"Kuaaak!"

I sliced at the incoming soldiers but couldn't see an end to it. The enemy ships were firing from a distance. We were finished if this ship sunk. The movie would end tragically and we would die here.

"Lee Jihye!"

I realized the greatness of Yi Sunshin.

How did he lead this battle to victory?

"Wake up now!"

This was a cursed scenario. We didn't have Song Yeojung or Jung Eungdoo. (*Apparently close companions of Yi Sunshin*)

All we had was a weak girl protected by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare. The girl staggered on the deck of the second floor.

"I-I'm disgusting. I... I don't deserve to be alive..."

Yes, it was disgusting. I was disgusting along with the way that I was using her.

"No one would be qualified."

"U-Ughhh..."

Tears endlessly poured from Lee Jihye's eyes. I held Hercules' Shield and stood in front of her.

Kwang! Kwaang! Kwaang!

"Survive and take responsibility! Atone for the rest of your life or live a garbage life. Just somehow survive!"

The ship was being broken by the indiscriminate shelling. I turned to her with cold eyes.

“Or do you really want to die here?”

[Your understanding of the character ‘Lee Jihye’ has increased.]

All types of emotions came from the crying Lee Jihye. She was drowning in the dark emotions of resentment, self-contempt and disillusionment with the world. Nevertheless, there was a straightforward emotion under it.

“I don’t want to die.”

The constellations were selfish. There were those who didn’t support their incarnation or didn’t care if their incarnation died or not. But.

As long as any constellation was in the stage of their ‘myth’, they wouldn’t turn away from their incarnation.

[The constellation ‘Maritime War God’ has responded to the will of ‘Lee Jihye’.]

A brilliant red light burst around Lee Jihye’s body. It was good for Yoo Jonghyuk but I didn’t get nothing. I had something to gain.

[The character ‘Lee Jihye’ has received a new stigma.]

The third stigma of Sword Demon Lee Jihye. It was the strongest stigma that would later make her a maritime admiral.

“...To God.”

Lee Jihye held the hilt of her sword and looked at the sea. There were many enemies and no allies. She quietly turned her sword towards the world.

“There are still 12 ships left.”

A radiant beam emerged from the end of her sword.

[The character ‘Lee Jihye’ has activated the stigma ‘Ghost Fleet Lv. 1!]

Water vapor rose in the area. Water sprayed all over the place and 12 ghost ships appeared in the sea.

“Get revenge on the enemies.”

The drumming paused like it was embarrassed. Shells flew towards the ghost fleet. However, the ghost fleet was disembodied and didn't suffer any damages.

“Die in this place.”

Finally, Lee Jihye's fleet started to move forward. 12 ships moved through the water, creating countless ripples. The white barrels started firing and the ships blocking the path collapsed helplessly.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The girl who didn't cry led the battlefield.

In front of the ghost fleet, the warships were completely overwhelmed. It wasn't just me., Jung Heewon and Lee Gilyoung also gaped at the scene.

This was the real power of a 'stigma.' It was the power of the admiral that wasn't pushed by anyone in a maritime war.

In the fading light of the sunset, the screams of the Japanese were heard from among the smoke. The whirlpool of Myeongnyang Strait sucked in the dead bodies. It took less than an hour for the last enemy ship to collapse.

[The theater owner is satisfied with the changed ending of the movie.]

[The fourth 'Ending Credit' has been reached.]

[Performers: Kim Dokja, Jung Heewon, Lee Jihye, Lee Gilyoung.]

[You have obtained 500 coins as compensation.]

As soon as we received the ending credit, additional messages came up.

[The bounty scenario is cleared.]

[You have received the Maritime War God's reward for the bounty scenario.]

Frankly, I was filled with expectations. Maybe I would get Ghost Fleet. If I could just get it then I wouldn't be envious of Lee Jihye.

[The stigma 'Song of the Sword' has been acquired.]

I thought I heard wrong when the message popped up.

The stigma Song of the Sword. This was originally a stigma that Lee Jihye acquired midway in the story. Yet the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare gave me this stigma.

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' thanks you.]

In a sense, this skill was something I needed more than Ghost Fleet right now. If I had this stigma, I might be able to prevent the worst from happening on the eighth floor.

The surrounding scenery slowly changed and we returned to the inside of the movie theatre. The exhausted Lee Ji-hye was staring at me.

"Ahjussi."

"You rest here. We will go to save Yoo Jonghyuk."

"But..."

"Listen up."

I obtained a new stigma but I didn't have time to laugh. No matter how good the stigma, there was no meaning if this 'world' was over. In order to prevent that 'end', I had to save Yoo Jonghyuk.

I distributed the ampoules I gathered to everyone. When raising the stats level, the coins consumption was increased every 10 levels. Therefore, I would use my coins first before the ampoules.

[4,000 coins have been consumed.]

[The comprehensive enhancement ampoules have been used.]

[Stamina Lv. 18 -> Stamina Lv. 24]

[Strength Lv. 18 -> Strength Lv. 24]

[Agility Lv. 11 -> Agility Lv. 20]

[Magic Power Lv. 10 -> Magic Power Lv. 15]

[All stats have increased significantly!]

We climbed the last stairway.

"Everyone, get ready."

[You have entered the eighth floor, the Heavenly Garden.]

The eighth floor of the theatre was a rooftop. It was a small dome reminiscent of an opera house. As soon as I stepped on the green grass of the rooftop, I found the back of the regressor I was looking for.

Ah...

When I thought about all those who would suffer if he died, my anger soared. Fortunately, the back of his head was good enough to be hit.

“Hey Yoo Jonghyuk!”

I ran towards Yoo Jonghyuk and hit him in the back of the head.

Chapter 40

Omniscient Sunfish (5)

The cold sensation numbed my fingers. Dammit, I really wanted to beat this guy up. But...

There was something strange.

“...Yoo Jonghyuk?”

This guy, he didn't look back. A grey-white aura was flowing from Yoo Jonghyuk's body. The aura felt ominous and caused my hairs to rise.

I instinctively took a step back. Looking closer, the aura was connected to an old man sitting on a chair on the eighth floor. I knew everything the moment I saw this old man.

[The ‘Theatre Master’s Simulacrum’ has been revealed.]

...Dammit, it had become like this. Yoo Jonghyuk emanated the whitish aura and slowly turned towards me. It was the worst situation.

[The ‘Theatre Master’s Simulacrum’ has controlled the character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk.’]

Goosebumps covered my entire body. A formidable killing intent was rising from the guy who lost all sense of reason. There was no ‘character’ in the world who could stop this guy now.

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ has used Force Palm Lv. 4!]

I barely managed to open my mouth.

“W-Wait a minute!”

Kwaaaang!

I experienced a strong pain in my side and my consciousness became numb. As this

person who did as he liked shot forward, pages flipped through my head. I was alert.

“...The 8th turn Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t die in Theatre Dungeon because he was weak. Strictly speaking, Yoo Jonghyuk wasn’t lucky.

The boss of the ‘Theatre Dungeon’ is the worst opponent for a regressor like Yoo Jonghyuk...”

My breathing was back.

“Kuhup... heook.”

[The External Reinforced Suit is damaged.]

[There is a reduction in the defense.]

I got up while holding my abdomen. It was a really nonsensical attack power. I ate so many ampoules yet still received this much damage from one blow?

One blow dealt huge damage and I was blown away to the other side of the rooftop.

[The character ‘Jung Heewon’ has used Demon Slaying Lv. 2!]

In the distance, Jung Heewon’s eyes were burning. I tried to get up but my body wasn’t listening to me.

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ has used Hundred Steps Godly Fists Lv. 4!]

The current Jung Heewon wasn’t Yoo Jonghyuk’s opponent. She could endure a few blows due to Demon Slaying but blood started to emerge from Jung Heewon’s mouth.

Yoo Jonghyuk was much stronger than I expected.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[There is too much information about this person. Character List is converted to Summary List.]

[Only randomly specified items will be displayed according to User’s convenience.]

[Character Summary List]

Name: Yoo Jonghyuk.

Private Attribute: Regressor (3rd turn) (Myth), Pro Gamer (Rare)

Exclusive Skills: Sage's Eyes Lv. 8, Hand to Hand Combat Lv. 8, Advanced Weapons Training Lv. 5, Mental Barrier Lv. 5, Hundred Steps Godly Fists Lv. 2, Red Phoenix Shunpo Lv. 1... Omitted...

Stigma: Regression Lv.3, Transmission Lv. 1

Overall Stats: Stamina Lv. 28, Strength Lv. 27, Agility Lv. 26, Magic Power Lv. 25.

* The character is currently in a loss of reason state.

This bastard. He activated a new stigma.

Transmission. It was a stigma that allowed Yoo Jonghyuk to wake up the skills he had in the past over time. Through this stigma, Yoo Jonghyuk would become a full-scale monster.

"Master!"

At this time, Lee Jihye came upstairs. The jerk flying towards Jung Heewon turned towards Lee Jihye.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa!

"Kyaaack!"

Thanks to the favour of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare or maybe Ghost Walk, Lee Jihye fortunately avoided the blow. I shouted toward Lee Jihye.

"He is being controlled! Go after the theater master!"

However, Lee Jihye wasn't free enough to do so. In the end, we couldn't reach the theatre master without going through Yoo Jonghyuk.

Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye's eyes crossed. Their swords moved towards Yoo Jonghyuk at the same time.

It was the combo of Kendo and Sword Training. But the combo that damaged even the T-Rex didn't work on Yoo Jonghyuk.

"Kuheok!"

Lee Jihye was hit in the face with Hundred Steps Godly Fists, spat out blood and collapsed.

[The character 'Jung Heewon' has activated the exclusive skill 'Judgment Time.']
[The constellations of the Absolute Good system are silent at Jung Heewon's request.]
[The skill has been cancelled.]

Jung Heewon cursed.

"Dammit... not this guy as well?"

It was natural. Yoo Jonghyuk was ruthless but his essence was 'righteous.'

Jung Heewon was hit by a force punch and lost her sword, rolling across the ground. In this desperate moment, Lee Gilyoung used the special skill 'Mjolnir's Thunder' from behind me.

Kukukung!

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' has offset the impact of the attack with 'Lightning Resistance.']

Yoo Jonghyuk looked this way. Shit. I knew he would be strong but... this much? I touched Lee Gilyoung's shoulder and staggered forward.

"Gilyoung. Please. Do you know what to do?"

Lee Gilyoung quickly noticed and immediately nodded.

"Yes Hyung."

"I'm sorry."

"No."

Lee Gilyoung started to mumble something straight away. Lee Gilyoung's pupils slowly reversed. I didn't want to do this but now I had to mobilize all my cards.

[You have used the Tyrant T-Rex's DNA Ampoule.]
[All stats will explosively increase for 30 minutes!]

Yes... let's fight you son of a bitch.

[Stamina Lv. 24 -> Stamina Lv. 34]
[Strength Lv. 24 -> Strength Lv. 34]
[Agility Lv. 20 -> Agility Lv. 30]
[Magic Power Lv. 15 -> Magic Power Lv. 25]
[The vitality in your body is rising!]
[The potential of your muscles have exploded!]
[You can move more agilely than before.]
[Your heart is seething with an unknown energy!]

The gap in insufficient skills was filled with overwhelming stats.

If Yoo Jonghyuk's Transmission was complete, it would be a useless gamble. But it was possible since the skill level was low.

Still, it would only be for a moment. This moment was good.

[The exclusive skill 'White Pure Star Energy Lv. 1' has been activated.]
[The accumulation of stats will increase the level of White Pure Star Energy!]
[White Pure Star Energy Lv. 1 -> White Pure Star Energy Lv. 2.]

The feeling of the magic power at my fingertips changed. I didn't have to run as he rushed towards me first. I realized my momentum was unusual as he pulled out his sword for the first time.

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' has used 'Splitting the Sky Energy Lv. 2'.]

Kakakakak!

Sparks flew from our blades. Neither Yoo Jonghyuk or I stepped back. I felt tremendous pressure as I gripped the blade. Blue ether burned around his blade.

At this point, it was wonderful beyond admiration. In the world of Ways of Survival, higher stats created an absolute gap in power. Now my physical stats were in the 3rd stage while Yoo Jonghyuk was in the 2nd. *(TL: So over 30 and over 20).*

Still, he wasn't pushed by me at all. No, it was to the point where I was pushed. I gritted my teeth.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 2 has been activated!]

As soon as the skill was activated, Yoo Jonghyuk's thoughts entered my mind.

"It is painful."

"Several more times in the future."

"Do I need to repeat this?"

I was furious. This bastard, already?

"Wake up you jerk!"

I struck his sword with all my might and stretched out a fist towards his jaw. The attack was possible because I read his movements with Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint.

Supak!

My fist hit his chin and he stumbled for the first time.

"Once the regression begins, everything will go back to the beginning."

"All my companions will lose their memories and my history is erased."

"You idiot!"

"Then everything will repeat again."

In fact, sunfish were very durable creatures. They died because they were vulnerable to stress, not because they were weak.

Just like this guy in front of me.

The theater master was able to control Yoo Jonghyuk was due to his uneasy mental state. The theatre master had weak physical abilities but the best mental abilities. If Yoo Jonghyuk's Mental Barrier was over level 80,000, this wouldn't have happened.

"What am I...?"

Yoo Jonghyuk's eyes were blurred. I was furious once I heard the thoughts in his head.

“Aren’t you a real protagonist?”

As someone who read all 3,149 chapters of Ways of Survival, I was furious.

“Haven’t you only regressed three times?”

I once again hit his head with all my strength. Was it a miracle? The blow to his jaw slowed him down a bit. I didn’t miss the opportunity and kicked his chest.

“Do you really think so? You have already forgotten the determination of your first attempt.”

“I am the only living thing in this world.”

A lonely voice.

“You bastard... don’t fall into those sentiments.”

I shouted while blocking his sword.

“If you can’t find the meaning of life in front of you, didn’t you decide to live for the greater cause?”

[The exclusive skill, ‘Fourth Wall’ is activated!]

I didn’t know who I was talking to anymore. Hot flames sprang up from the blade. My eyes stung and my skin became raw from the heat. My voice was breathless. Maybe I was also lost in the moment.

“I am alone.”

It was as if I was Yoo Jonghyuk or even lived Yoo Jonghyuk’s life. My chest was tight.

“Alone?”

“I...”

“What did I come here for if you are alone?”

“I...”

My sword struck and tore at his hands. Blood flowed and the flesh was torn. I wielded the sword like a madman. I gritted my teeth.

“Why are you alone? When you died like a fool in the Theatre Dungeon, when you cried over your dead little sister, when the prophet stabbed you in the back! When your loved one gave birth to a child...!”

As I was talking, I strangely recalled other memories. Letters and letters passed. My old memories of Ways of Survival.

“You went crazy after your child died!”

The complex memories of his family affairs and things he experienced passed through my mind.

“Fighting against the demon kings and the returnees!”

The nightmares of the senior officers in the army.

“Helping people and fighting against the damn reincarnators! When you finally stood before the constellations!”

The days when I struggled to get a job and when my bosses were vile and abusive. Everything was in order to live. In order to survive every day.

“Look around you and try to live somehow!”

Even so, I returned home. I felt relieved when reading one novel.

“I...”

My hand holding the blade trembled. I became too excited. Dammit. I just needed to buy enough time.

I breathed roughly and looked ahead. But... something was strange. Was it an illusion? It was only a moment but a dim light was returning to Yoo Jonghyuk’s hand.

“I...”

Some things couldn’t be understood even if I read his mind. My heart thumped the

moment I saw Yoo Jonghyuk's look.

[The excessive immersion has caused the 'Fourth Wall' to shake.]

Yoo Jonghyuk's eyes were staring straight at me.

"You... who are you?"

Chapter 41

Omniscient Sunfish (6)

“What?”

“What are you...?”

I was surprised by the sudden change in thoughts. Surely he didn't regain his sense of reason after hearing my words? How could that be?

I was a bit confused. In the first place, I didn't start this operation with the expectation of such a result.

[The 'Theatre Master's Simulacrum' is embarrassed.]

[The 'Theatre Master's Simulacrum' has strengthened his control on the character 'Yoo Jonghyuk.']

“Kuaaak...!”

Yoo Jonghyuk's eyes blurred again.

Indeed. I had felt hope but it was unreasonable for him to wake up himself. Otherwise, he wouldn't be a sunfish. I would be grateful if he didn't commit suicide. The ether of Yoo Jonghyuk's sword trembled.

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk's Splitting the Sky Energy' has grown!]

In the meantime, the skills received through Transmission were becoming stronger. It was thanks to the talent of a main character.

The White Pure Star Energy gradually collapsed as I kept struggling. I didn't know if it was the limit of the skill itself or a difference in talent.

I glanced at Lee Gilyoung. Blood was pouring down from Lee Gilyoung's nose. The time had come.

“Jonghyuk.”

Perhaps after today, Yoo Jonghyuk would become surprisingly strong. I pushed his sword away as hard as I could.

“Do you remember what I asked before? I asked if I could hit you?”

There was a difference in natural talent. In the next few years, Yoo Jonghyuk would become incomparable stronger than me.

But not right now. At least for now.

“You told me to hit you if I could. Do you remember?”

If I did this now, then at least for a moment...

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

[The special option of Unbroken Faith is activated.]

[The ether property is converted to ‘fire.’]

I could overwhelm this ridiculous guy.

Ether Blade. The fire ether appeared in empty space.

Hwaruruk!

Yoo Jonghyuk was surprised by the sudden attack and took a few steps back. He instinctively felt that it was something extraordinary. But it was too late.

[The stigma ‘Song of the Sword’ has been used.]

Song of the Sword. It was one of the strongest combat buffs that the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare was proud of.

[Your sword is filled with the words left by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.]

There was a large variation in the attack power depending on which verse was sung, but it was a perfect skill for me right now.

“Shooting arrows like rain and protecting the generalissimo from guns firing on all

sides.”

Fortunately, it was a verse from the Nanjung Ilgi.

An enormous magic power emerged and all the burning ethers were united. I swung it towards Yoo Jonghyuk.

“The chaos was like a thunderstorm.”

The fire ether took the shape of arrows and started to bombard him. It was an attack that couldn’t be used for a long time due to insufficient magic power. However, this would suffice.

Dudududududu!

“Kuooh!”

Numerous red wounds appeared all over Yoo Jonghyuk’s body.

In this damn world where coins represented all values and the constellations decided the development of the world, I still needed Yoo Jonghyuk.

Thus, I would protect him today.

Hwaruruk!

Yoo Jonghyuk’s actions stopped as flames burned the area. His Fire Resistance meant it might not be a serious blow, but it was enough to force him into a state of inactivity. I looked at the ‘theater master’ sitting at the edge of the garden.

[The ‘Theatre Master’s Simulacrum’ is extremely alert to you.]

Now was the only chance. I started running. In the distance, I could see the theatre master stiffen.

Then.

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ has used Recovery Lv. 2!]

Dammit, Yoo Jonghyuk was already chasing after me.

Recovery. It was a scam skill where he could recover quickly after being hit hard once a day. He already obtained this skill due to Transmission.

No matter how fast I ran, I couldn't be faster than Yoo Jonghyuk who used Red Phoenix Shunpo.

I ignored the theater master in front of me and collided with Yoo Jonghyuk's sword. I could only believe in my last card. I cried out with all my strength.

"Gilyoung!"

Kukukung!

The moment I cried out, there was a huge crack in the ceiling of Sky Garden.

The black dome surrounding the roof was breaking. The Yoo Jonghyuk running towards me was also the Yoo Jonghyuk manipulated by the theatre master. He looked up with surprise at the ceiling.

It was generally impossible for the shielded area of a 'hidden scenario' to be broken. But it was possible for 'uncommon' existences.

In the distance, Lee Gilyoung was crying while wiping his bleeding nose.

"U-Uwahh... uwahhhh...!"

In order to deal with a monster, you had to call a monster.

Kuoooooh!

A huge insect dug into the cracks of the broken dome.

Rattle!

Like thin glass, the dome broke and the roof was split apart. The astonished theater master screamed. A monster that could destroy the shielded area of a hidden scenario. It was like a gigantic praying mantis, the insect king of great size.

[The 6th grade insect king, Titanoptera has appeared!]

It was an appearance that caused goosebumps. The monster that had been fighting with the poisonous rhino the other day. This monster came here in response to Lee Gilyoung's Diverse Communication. Lee Gilyoung laughed.

"He, hehe... Titano..."

Titano? Don't tell me... it did look similar but surely not.

Kuoooooh!

The huge preying mantis flew towards the theatre master. Then Yoo Jonghyuk blocked it.

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' has used 'Strong Self-Defense Lv. 4'.]

Kwaaaaang!

There was a massive sound and Yoo Jonghyuk's body was pushed down into the floor of the rooftop. Yet Yoo Jonghyuk was still standing.

Ku ku ku ku!

...He was really a ridiculous monster. He could do with a 6th grade species with his current abilities? Yoo Jonghyuk even launched a counterattack.

Kyaaaaoh!

The Titanoptera screamed at the hard blow. Surprisingly, Yoo Jonghyuk was on par with the 6th grade insect king.

Maybe it was something he saw when fighting with me. The colour of the theatre master was returning. Yoo Jonghyuk was strong. It was a sudden situation but the theatre master thought he could win.

He was wrong. He should've been looking at me.

I ran towards the theater master again. There wasn't long left on Diverse Communicaton. I wouldn't let Lee Gilyoung's efforts be in vain.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

The theatre master belatedly discovered me and shouted.

The theater master's simulacrum.

According to the setting of Ways of Survival, this named boss was made with all the heart and soul of a constellation. A lot of time passed and he was in a deteriorated form, becoming the boss of a hidden scenario. However... he was still able to penetrate Yoo Jonghyuk's Mental Barrier.

The one who received the divine protection of a constellation. He was never a pushover.

[The 'Theatre Master's Simulacrum' has triggered 'Simulacra.'

It was a delirium skill on a higher level than the specter's Welcome Prison.

The surrounding space distorted and all types of illusions appeared. The monsters seemed closer to reality than illusions.

The ground rats, grolls, poisonous rhinos, T-rex... The monsters I had encountered so far were running towards me. The fierce teeth and violence claws ripped and clawed at me, but I didn't stop. I wasn't afraid. It was all fake. They didn't exist. They were all fiction from a novel.

The moment that the Blade of Faith reached his neck.

[The 'Theatre Master's Simulacrum' has triggered 'Mental Erosion.]

Mental Erosion. It was the advanced cognitive manipulation skill used on Yoo Jonghyuk. I wasn't afraid because I had the Fourth Wall. But something unexpected happened the moment he penetrated my head.

[The 'Theatre Master's Simulacrum' is embarrassed.]

Abyss of the ego.

All types of thoughts gathered and the pages of Ways of Survival fluttered.

-T-This? This, is...!

Numerous texts emanated a faint light and floated in the darkness. It was the chapters of Ways of Survival that I had read.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is activated!]

The complexion of the theatre master changed as he dug into my head. He looked at the strings around him and his face whitened.

–Don't, tell, me, you... ahhh!

This was the last thing he said. Strangely, he looked at me in awe.

The moment Blade of Faith was about to cross his neck, a dazzling light came from his body. It was like a ghost touching a divine light or the penalty for breaking a taboo.

He was destroyed without a trace.

I looked down at my hands and felt dazed.

...What just happened?

[The 'Theatre Master's Simulacra' has been killed for the first time.]

[You have obtained 9,000 coins as compensation.]

[You have met the conditions to clear the hidden scenario!]

[You have obtained 4,000 coins as compensation.]

These messages rose. I looked back and saw Yoo Jonghyuk collapsing after being released from the theatre master's control. Fortunately, he didn't die. The same was true for Lee Gilyoung, who had forcibly used Diverse Communication.

"Hyung..."

I rushed over and embraced Lee Gilyoung. Lee Gilyoung lost strength and fainted in my arms.

[The barrier surrounding the Theater Dungeon has disappeared.]

The barrier covering the ceiling vanished and I looked at the insect king. Surprising, it turned around and fled. It was like all interest had vanished. I breathed out with a sense of relief.

It was over.

“...Are you okay?”

Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye staggered over.

“I’m fine. Heewon-ssi?”

“I’m okay. Fortunately, Jihye is safe.”

Lee Jihye was hit a lot by Yoo Jonghyuk and she couldn’t speak because her mouth was swollen.

[The ending time for the third main scenario is approaching!]

Perhaps it was time for the end.

I looked around the rooftop and saw that dawn was coming, making the day brighter. If Lee Hyunsung was here, he would recite the ‘homeland’ prayer.

Jung Heewon groaned.

“Ah... Seoul.”

The ruined city area was illuminated by the faint light of dawn. I heard intermittent explosions from far away. Now there was no more poisonous fog. The poisonous rhinos were crushed under the collapsed buildings. I could see people fighting among themselves. They were probably a group that ended the scenario before us. The entire landscape was trapped inside a huge dome.

It was a large barrier that seemed to be breaking.

Currently, Seoul was isolated in a transparent dome.

Jung Heewon said, “Really... it is all ending.”

It was a scene that had to be acknowledged once again.

I looked at the collapsed buildings and thought that Mino Soft would be somewhere there. Yoo Sangah would be disappointed. It was because Yoo Sangah was a person

who worked hard. Lee Gilyoung wriggled in my arms.

“Have you regained consciousness?”

Lee Gilyoung nodded and pointed to the sky.

From a distance, a meteor shower seemed to be falling. The meteor shower was originally the forerunner of the main scenario. However, the number of meteor showers was more than before.

It meant the ‘hall’ would open soon.

The meteor showers were probably falling all over the world.

Jung Heewon admired it.

“Pretty...”

Jung Heewon didn’t know. The meteors that looked beautiful from a distance would make a nightmare for the people where it fell.

Now a bigger disaster would come.

Lee Gilyoung gathered his small hands together and muttered something. Jung Heewon and Lee Jihye were silent for a while. Maybe they were also praying.

It was funny. Wishing to the beings who would become a source of nightmare, it was probably only human beings who did this in the entire universe.

After a while, Lee Gilyoung opened his eyes and looked up at me.

“Hyung isn’t making a wish?”

I looked down at Lee Gilyoung and replied.

“I have made a wish.”

“What is it?”

“Gilyoung, you shouldn’t ask that.” Jung Heewon scolded him.

I watched Jung Heewon, Yoo Jonghyuk and then the collapsed Seoul again.

“I wish to see the novel’s epilogue.”

Lee Gilyoung looked at me with confusion.

I silently gazed at the sky. There were slight cracks in the sky above Seoul. Once the sun rose, the dokkaebis would open a new hell.

Chapter 42

Future War (1)

[Main Scenario #3 – Emergency Defense has ended.]
[You have obtained 1,000 coins as compensation.]

The main scenario, which was supposed to begin only after the sun had risen, actually started less than 10 minutes after the third main scenario was over.

[The fourth main scenario is about to begin!]

Damn, how long had it been since the third scenario ended...

I went straight to Lee Jihye.

“You take Yoo Jonghyuk.”

“...Can I do that?”

“You can’t go downstairs now anyway. It will be a problem for when he wakes up.”

Lee Jihye nodded as she looked at Yoo Jonghyuk.

“Please inform me when he wakes up. I want to give him another hit in the back.”

I headed downstairs with Jung Heewon. I carried Lee Gilyoung, who had completely fallen asleep after the meteor shower.

The dungeon disappeared and it turned into an ordinary theatre. The items in the rewards room on the 5th floor were turned into ordinary stage props. It was as if everything that happened yesterday was a dream.

Then Blhyung’s voice was heard.

[...Do you know what I am going to say?]

‘Yes.’

[Sigh... I nearly fell down.]

I felt a little relieved as I listened to Bihyung’s grumbles.

The constellations were powerful but they weren’t omniscient. It was because all the sounds and images of the scenario were transmitted through the ‘channel.’ What did this mean?

‘Was it filtered properly? I was too excited that I said too much.’

[Of course it was. Is there something wrong with my channel? That level of information is automatically filtered.]

If my thoughts were correct, the words I said to Yoo Jonghyuk would be conveyed to the constellations in the following way.

–Do you really think so? You have already forgotten the determination of your ■■ attempt.

–Why are you alone? When you ■■■ like a fool in the ■■■■■■■■, when you cried over your ■■■■■■! When your loved one gave ■■ to a ■■!

–Helping people and fighting against the damn ■■■! When you finally ■■■ before the ■■■■■■!”

In fact, I didn’t know how much filtering there was.

It might be more than this, but it wouldn’t be weak. In the original work, Yoo Jonghyuk experienced information being blocked this way at the beginning, even when information about ‘regressors’ was spreading.

[The constellations didn’t hear anything. Don’t worry. The problem is that even I didn’t hear much.]

‘...You didn’t hear it?’

This was a bit odd. The dokkaebi also couldn’t hear the information?

[Yes, that's right. What were you talking about?]

Information that even the dokkaebi didn't know. I had one guess. Perhaps... the constraints of 'probability' had begun? I naturally came up with something from Ways of Survival.

"Probability' is a great deterrent that controls the Star Stream."

...I was reminded of it but it didn't help me straight away. One of the reasons why Ways of Survival was ruined was that there were too many settings the writer didn't know well.

'What is the reaction among the constellations?'

[They are fed up. There is still an uproar about what you were talking about.]

I guess so. The constellations experienced a filter and the movie suddenly changed into a silent movie.

If they were smart, they should start paying attention to the possibilities I had. The fact that my words were filtered meant I knew information that shouldn't be revealed at the present time.

[A few constellations are watching you to explore your secrets.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' is excited by your existence.]

[2,000 coins have been sponsored.]

I thought Bihyung had forgotten.

[I received so many indirect messages that I didn't send them to you. Do you understand?]

'Do so in the future. I only want messages about coins.'

[...Am I your manager?]

The figure of Bihyung disappeared. I thought he was becoming cuter over time. One thing was finished and the other...

"Dokja-ssi, is it hard? I'll carry Gilyoung."

“Ah, it would be appreciated.”

I handed Lee Gilyoung to Jung Heewon. Her face looked somewhat serious. I hesitated for a moment before opening my mouth.

“Heewon-ssi.”

“Huh?”

“What are you worried about?”

“No, just...” Jung Heewon hesitated for a moment before sighing. “Hah... okay. It isn’t in my nature to keep it in.”

Indeed.

Jung Heewon got directly to the point.

“What is Dokja-ssi’s identity?”

“...Did you hear something earlier?”

“A little bit.”

I thought she wouldn’t hear it because we were quite far away. Unfortunately, she heard something. Jung Heewon was closer than Lee Jihye and no human-to-human filtering is possible...

Lee Gilyoung let out a loud snoring noise. I decided to be half honest.

“I know part of the future.”

“Really?”

“Yes.”

Jung Heewon thought about something for a while. She seemed to be wondering if my words were true or not. Then Jung Heewon seemed to have decided as she bit her lips.

“Do Yoo Sangah and Lee Hyunsung know?”

“They don’t know yet.”

I answered in earnest and Jung Heewon stepped away from me with Lee Gilyoung.

“...Surely you aren’t going to kill me?”

“Why are you saying this all of a sudden?”

“Normally, a development like ‘You know too much about me’ will occur...”

Where did this normal development come from? Somehow I seemed to be a bad person.

“I don’t know what the normal development is but I would’ve already killed Heewon-ssi if I wanted to.”

“Actually, that is a bit weird.”

“...I don’t have bad thoughts. It is actually the opposite.”

“The opposite?”

I looked into Jung Heewon’s eyes and said.

“The future scenarios will be more dangerous. You might almost die many times and might lose precious things.”

“...So?”

“So...”

I looked into Jung Heewon’s increasingly nervous eyes and said.

“Please stay with me from now on.”

“...What do you mean?”

“It means to be my companion.”

It was time to make my people. ‘Trustworthy people’ who wouldn’t easily betray me.

Jung Heewon, who I helped awaken and could read her mind, was the most suitable talent. Jung Heewon looked blank for a moment.

“Dokja-ssi didn’t consider me a companion before?”

“It is actually the opposite. I’m not the one who doesn’t think of you as a companion.”

Jung Heewon’s eyes shook.

I deliberately took a step back.

“If you don’t want to be companions, think of it as a deal. I need Heewon’s strength and my information will be helpful to Heewon-ssi. It is give and take. The important thing is that our relationship won’t change in the future.”

“It is a bit abrupt... Do I have to answer now?”

“No.”

For a person like Jung Heewon, a leisurely approach was better than a hasty and emotional one. In fact, Jung Heewon’s expression wasn’t bad.

[The character ‘Jung Heewon’ is relieved at your honesty.]

[The character ‘Jung Heewon’ is seriously thinking about your proposal.]

Maybe it wouldn’t be long. I had a big influence on Jung Heewon’s awakening event and my presence would be deeply stamped in her subconscious.

Perhaps when this scenario was over, the second Sponsor Selection would begin. Then Jung Heewon would gain a sponsor. The real power of Jung Heewon would be shown from then on.

“Then can I ask you something?”

“Yes.”

“Do you know what I am doing in the future?”

I looked up. Wouldn’t this be filtered?

“I also don’t know.”

“...Huh?”

“There is no Jung Heewon in the future that I know.”

“What...”

“That’s why this deal is really necessary for Heewon-ssi.”

Jung Heewon’s eyes widened.

Jung Heewon wasn’t in the original book. She was a variable that I raised directly. Her attribute was good enough and if she got a proper sponsor, she would play a key role in changing future scenarios. Especially if I fought against people with ‘other variables’ that I didn’t know.

Then a loud noise was heard from downstairs.

“Think about it. Let’s hurry.”

We descended to the platform where many people were putting pressure on a small group.

I understood the situation. The Landlord Alliance. They were still like this.

“Where did that bastard Kim Dokja go? Tell me quickly.”

Looking closer, I saw that the Landlord Alliance were harassing Lee Hyunsung. I deliberately walked towards them and spoke in a loud voice.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi, Lee Hyunsung-ssi.”

“You!”

An alliance member cried out as soon as I came down to the platform of Line 4.

I saw a familiar landlord uncle. The evidence of the fierce battle remained on the bastard’s body. At first glance, I could tell that his overall stats had risen sharply. I liked it.

“Gong Pildu.”

Gong Pildu used Armed Zone and eight turrets rose. The alliance members centred around Gong Pildu looked at me. They didn't know the person who saved them.

“This jerk...!”

The moment Gong Pildu was about to say something. There was an electric current in the air.

[The fourth main scenario will start in 5 minutes!]

Along with the system message, Dokkaebi Bihyung appeared.

[Hahaha, everyone! Have you been well?]

People's expressions stiffened at this nasty guy's face.

[It looks like you are all restless!]

“W-What is it now?”

[Of course I came because of the announcement for the fourth scenario.]

“This is shit...”

[Now now, don't act like that. Don't you know I go after the first person who complains? The fourth main scenario has to do with the other stations. A fairly exciting story is waiting for you. I'm sure you will be satisfied!]

Everyone's complexions darkened as they heard about other stations.

Chungmuro alone was this bad. It was obvious how much trouble there would be if other stations were involved. Bihyung laughed.

[By the way, in order to proceed with this scenario, you have to perform another task first. Won't it be a mess if the number of people increases? Therefore, you need a presence to lead you. In other words, there must be a station representative!]

Representative. It was finally starting.

[From now on, we will play a ‘skirmish.’] It could be called a warm-up game. The rules of the game... well, you will see!]

Bihyung smiled and disappeared, while a message window popped up in front of everyone.

[The sub scenario has arrived!]

+

[Sub Scenario – Elect a Representative]

Category: Sub

Difficulty: C

Clear Conditions: Take the ‘white flag’ installed in the centre of the platform.

Time Limit: 30 minutes

Compensation: 1,000 coins, Chungmuro’s representative.

Failure: —

* The representative of the station can exercise strong control over the members.

+

Before the message window fully popped up, Gong Pildu was already running to the flag in the centre of the platform. He truly was like a ghost.

“Everybody get out of the way!”

Gong Pildu pushed people like a runaway locomotive and was in the lead to get the white flag. This couldn’t happen. The moment his fingertips were about to reach the flag, I opened my mouth.

“Gong Pildu, down!”

[Under the terms of the contract, ‘Command Rights’ is activated!]

“Waaack!”

I stepped on the back of the collapsed Gong Pildu and took the white flag.

[You have pulled the white flag from the flagpole.]

[You have become the ‘representative’ of Chungmuro.]

[You are qualified to walk the ‘King’s Road.’]

Chapter 43

Future War (2)

As soon as my hand wrapped around the flag, I felt a strong energy rising in my body. Originally, this was something the third turn Yoo Jonghyuk should have but... it didn't matter.

Wasn't he already strong?

[‘Kim Dokja’ has occupied the white flag.]

[If the white flag doesn't change owners in the next five minutes, Chungmuro will be under his control.]

[If the flag is snatched in the next five minutes, the timer will reset.]

A timer appeared in the air.

[5:00]

Gong Pildu pointed at me with a pale face.

“Take away the flag! You only have to snatch it in five minutes!”

The alliance member belatedly regained their minds and started rushing towards me. Oho, it was like this?

Lee Hyunsung turned to me.

“Dokja-ssi!”

“Hyunsung-ssi!”

We called out to each other at the same time. Hercules' Shield flew out of my hands into Lee Hyunsung's hands.

“T-This?”

“I picked it out for you. Throw away what you previously used.

A big smile appeared on Lee Hyunsung’s face.

[The character ‘Lee Hyunsung’ has used the exclusive skill ‘Wide-Area Defense!]

A translucent shield centred on Hercules’ Shield surrounded our party. Indeed, this was the secondary skill attached to an A-grade item.

“Wah, what is this?”

People groaned as they ran into the air shield. They tried to break the protective shields with their old weapons but it couldn’t be broken with E-grade or F-grade items. In the end, the alliance members had only one place to turn to.

“Pildu-ssi!”

“Out of the way!”

The level of Armed Zone had risen considerably and there was already a small Armed Zone under Gong Pildu’s feet. He reduced the area to shorten the cooldown time. He was using his brains.

Well, I had to handle it properly.

“Pildu, did I tell you to get up yet?”

“Heok?”

Gong Pildu’s head once again slammed into the ground as he fell flat.

[Under the terms of the contract, ‘Command Rights’ is activated!]

“Keep your head on the ground until I tell you to get up.”

The perplexed alliance members shouted at Gong Pildu.

“P-Pildu-ssi?”

“P-Pull me up! Quickly!”

The terrified alliance members tried to raise Gong Pildu up but it wasn't easy because Gong Pildu was very heavy.

"And... it is annoying so turn off the turrets."

[The character 'Gong Pildu' has released 'Armed Zone Lv. 6!]

"T-This bastard...!"

"Shut your mouth as well. Stay silent for 30 minutes."

[Under the terms of the contract, 'Command Rights' is activated!]

"Oof oof oof!"

The alliance members became completely panic stricken once Gong Pildu became powerless with just a few words. Of course, the same was true for Lee Hyunsung, Yoo Sangah and Jung Heewon.

I said with a smile, "Now everyone seems to have figured out the situation and I'd like to talk to you..."

I could see people wincing and withdrawing.

There were roughly 29 people left. 20 members from the Landlord Alliance and nine extra people, including me and my party. The number wasn't high but it was better than I thought. It was because having too many people at the beginning was difficult to control. I watched them and said.

"Now you have two choices."

It was time to pick a side.

"The first one is to leave Chungmuro and go to another station. Or stay here with me."

"W-What are you saying so suddenly...?"

"Just answer me. Will you remain here or will you go elsewhere? You better decide before the main scenario starts. Or else your life will be in danger."

The eyes of the people present started to quickly move. Someone looked at me, someone else looked at Gong Pildu and another person looked at the tunnel leading to another station. I could tell their thoughts just be looking at them.

“I won’t stop anyone who wants to leave. But anyone who stays here will be under my control.”

“Control...?”

“Behaviour like the Landlord Alliance’ is no longer acceptable. I won’t allow tyranny over a small group.”

A handful of people watching me furtively started to stand by my side. They had been treated harshly by the Landlord Association and thought it was better to stick with me. It was a good judgment. A few alliance members shouted.

“In the end, you are going to reign!”

“I won’t deny it. But I won’t take taxes or survival money.”

“Is our safety guaranteed if we enter your group?”

A man from the alliance asked. Well, they bothered the tenants so much that it was natural to worry.

“I’ll guarantee some outside safety but I won’t interfere with what is going on inside. You must deal with conflicts between individuals yourself.”

“T-That...”

“I’ll give you one minute. You have until then to decide.”

There was no need to wait for one minute. People had already made up their minds. Some of the alliance members walked over to me with determined expressions and bowed their heads. They were relatively young.

“Thank you in advance. I was wrong in the past. Thank you for your generous forgiveness.”

“It is a pleasure. You don’t have to ask for forgiveness from me.”

[Some members within the group fell a sense of trust towards you.]

However, several others decided to leave Chungmuro. They tried to raise the fallen Gong Pildu.

I watched them and said, “Ah, leave Gong Pildu. That guy is mine.”

“What?”

“If you have decided then leave quickly.”

The five alliance members frowned at this and withdrew.

“Kang-ssi! Do you really not want to come with me? It is better than staying under him!”

“Let’s all go! Are you really going to serve that guy? You’ve seen him!”

But there were no more defectors.

The five men cursed a few times before heading for the tunnel towards Myeongdong. They wanted to gain land elsewhere and become new ‘landlords’. Unfortunately, their plan would fail. In the fourth scenario, the people ‘wandering’ were good prey to predators.

Once five minutes passed, the system messages popped up.

[The sub scenario has ended.]

[You have earned 1,000 coins as compensation.]

[The white flag will show its true effects to the Chungmuro representative.]

[Current Group: 24 people.]

[Your reputation is still too weak to gain the title of king.]

The title of king...

Indeed, it was hard to get the title of king with just a white flag. In order to walk the proper king’s road, I had to change the colour of the flag. Of course, the white colour had its own ‘authority.’

[You have gained control of the Chungmuro Group through the effect of the white flag.]

[You can punish a group member who goes against you.]

[There are currently five people who have left.]

I could give a 'punishment' to the five distant men but I left it alone. Terror was effective in controlling people but such tyranny wasn't suitable for me.

"Well, thank you."

I said while looking everyone in the eyes.

Lee Hyunsung was looking at me with respect while Yoo Sangah and Jung Heewon nodded. The rest of them were looking at me with similar expressions. They were still rabble but it wasn't a bad start.

Shortly afterwards, Bihyung appeared in the air.

[Ohu, you have voted for a representative. Then let's start the game!]

[The fourth main scenario is activated!]

+

[Main Scenario #4 – Struggle for the Flag]

Category: Main

Difficulty: C

Clear Conditions: (Hidden because there are many contents)

Time Limit: 12 days.

Compensation: 2,000 coins.

Failure: ???

+

I press the clear conditions.

Numerous messages appeared in front of me.

+

[Clear Conditions]

1. Every station has a 'flag' and 'flagpole' that can be occupied.

* The flag can only be carried by the 'representative' of the station.

2. You need to protect the flag from other station groups. If a flag is taken away by

another group, the losing group will be taken over by the group that occupied the flag.

3. You can put a 'flag' in the 'flagpole' of another station. The authority of the flag is only for the 'representative' of each station. Once the representative dies in an armed conflict, the authority of the representative is transferred to the person who holds the flag first. If you take the 'flag' of another station group, the treatment of the group deprived of the flag is determined by the group that took the flag.

4. You must occupy the 'flagpole' of the 'target station' within a certain time limit. Failure to do so will result in the death of all group members.

5. The target station your group should occupy is Changsin Station.

+

Jung Heewon thought for a moment before opening her mouth.

"...We have to keep our flag and flagpole while putting out flag in other stations. Am I understanding it right?"

"That is how I understood it. We must take the flag to Changsin Station." Lee Hyunsung also spoke.

Then I said, "That's right. Everyone has understood."

Jung Heewon narrowed her eyes at my words. She knew I was pretending not to know. Now that I knew the future, she kept looking at me. I grinned towards Jung Heewon.

Yoo Sangah touched her shoulder and said.

"Again... we once again have to fight against people?"

Lee Hyunsung thought for a moment before replying.

"It said that we can decide on the treatment of the group if we occupy their flagpole... hopefully there might not be any casualties."

"Ah, I see. That death won't necessarily occur if we take over the station? If we can accept the members of that station group when deciding the treatment..."

"Yes, it is possible to clear it without anyone dying."

Lee Hyunsung replied with a smile. However, my heart wasn't comfortable.

It seemed like Yoo Sangah and Lee Hyunsung were trying to understand the world with some saintly logic.

There was no such thing as a scenario where no one died. The fourth scenario would have more casualties than any precious scenario.

As if she knew my heart, Jung Heewon changed the topic.

"What line is Changsin Station? I think we should know that first."

Lee Hyunsung confirmed it on the route map.

"Line 6. If we go to the tunnel, we can use the transit route..."

"Then we should split the group. How about a few people guarding this place while others go to scout?"

I didn't have to say anything as they actively exchanged opinions. It was somewhat heartwarming.

[The activation of the scenario will turn off Chungmuro Station's safety borders.]
[You can now freely move to other stations.]

As people were exchanging their opinions, I approached Gong Pildu.

"Gong Pildu, you can speak now."

The command was turned off but Gong Pildu couldn't easily open his mouth.

"I know that you feel badly towards me. But you have to adapt. The days when you are a landlord are over."

"..."

"I know why you have been so obsessed with 'land.' But do it moderately. If you want to survive in the future. Don't you have something to do?"

Gong Pildu's eyes were shaky. I continued speaking.

“You will be in charge of protecting this place.”

Just like the third scenario, Gong Pildu was very useful for the fourth scenario. As long as Gong Pildu protected this place, Chungmuro would be safe unless someone on Yoo Jonghyuk’s level came.

“Why should I speak to you...?”

“This time I won’t enforce it with a command. If you follow my request, there will be a reward.”

“ ... ”

“Think carefully. Think about your family.”

Gong Pildu’s eyes became bigger at my words.

“You, how...!”

At this moment, noise was heard from the tunnel.

Baang~!

There was a loud horn sound and headlights shone on the railway of line 4. There was a bike engine sound and an exhaust sound. Something was coming towards Chungmuro.

Chapter 44

Future War (3)

...It hadn't been long since the scenario began and already?

I tried to recall the original story but there was no recollection of such an early invasion. It meant variables had appeared.

In the darkness, the headlights turned off and there was the sound of people talking.

"Ah, we finally made it to Chungmuro."

"Really, it took them a long time to break the scenario."

"Hey, be quiet. They are going to hear. And don't you know that the scenarios are different between stations?"

I watched as the people came closer with weapons. The most important thing in a battle was to take the lead first. I went forward, followed by Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon, then Yoo Sangah in the rear. Lee Gilyoung was still sleeping.

How many seconds passed? The four men and women in the darkness walked towards this side. I opened my mouth.

"Stop there."

"Eh? Well well."

The people stopped in their traces when they saw the blade I was pointing. There were white bikes beside them. I heard weapons being pulled out but a man's voice was faster.

"Wait a minute. Calm down. Oh, I can't even talk because I am too scared."

"Put down your weapons and slowly come this way."

The man put down his weapon and approached with both hands raised. Once he entered the light, the man's impression wasn't bad. He gave off a reasonably favourable impression. His thin eyes were in a gentle curve.

"Don't be too wary. We didn't come here to fight."

"Then why did you come?"

"Let's start with the introductions. I'm Kang Ilhun and I help manage the Dongdaemun Group."

Kang Ilhun? Nobody popped up in my head straight away. Furthermore, the representative of Dongdaemun... things were becoming strange.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

Since the skill worked, he was certainly a character in the novel.

[Character Information]

Name: Kang Ilhun

Age: 31 years old

Constellation Sponsor: Shameless Good Gossiper

Private Attribute: Rumours Expert (General)

Exclusive Skills: Weapons Training Lv. 2, Art of Communication Lv. 3, Spread Rumours Lv. 1.

Stigma: Making a Commotion Lv. 1.

Overall Stats: Stamina Lv. 12, Strength Lv. 13, Agility Lv. 13, Magic Power Lv. 10.

Overall Evaluation: Unfortunately, he didn't develop his character due to the wrong sponsor. But he is a person with good ability who can be used. He spreads rumours regardless of truth or lies, so be careful.

Rumours Expert... It was time for these guys to start acting. Kang Ilhun looked at me with slight impatience.

"Your name is...?"

"Kim Dokja."

"Ah, Kim Dokja-ssi...?"

A flash of wonder crossed Kang Ilhun's face as he heard my name. However, it was only for a short moment.

"Nice to meet you, Dokja-ssi. Since you have a flag, you must be a station representative?"

"That's right."

He looked closely at the colour of my flag and then the people around me. It was to confirm the power on our side. He was keen eyes but unfortunately, he met the wrong opponent.

"If you have seen enough, get to the main point."

"Hahat. I beg your pardon. We also need to be concerned about safety." Kang Ilhun continued speaking without any panic. "Once again, we didn't come to fight. What if we came with a good offer?"

I watched Kang Ilhun's party. None of them had a flag.

"How can I believe that?"

"Hmm, won't you know if you check the rules? If we came to fight, we would've come with the representative. Only the representative can occupy the flagpole."

It was true. It was obviously true.

"What is the offer?"

"We came to ask for an alliance."

At these words, the members of Chungmuro started murmuring. Kang Ilhun shook.

"Ah, you are uncertain because Chungmuro just opened. In fact, the fourth scenario has already been in progress for two days."

"...Two days?"

Yoo Sangah reflexively muttered. Kang Ilhun nodded.

"Yes, the third scenario is slightly different in content and duration between stations..."

perhaps you didn't know this?"

"Ah..."

The third scenario was just over but I already knew this. In the original story, Chungmuro was a latecomer in the scenario compared to other stations. In other words, we started with some losses in terms of information.

In that sense, Kang Ilhun's alliance offer was a timely temptation. Information was required and this was beyond our strength. The problem was what did the other side gain?

"It is a difficult offer to accept. I don't know if you have an ulterior motive."

"Hrmm, Dokja-ssi's words are definitely right. You won't believe in the alliance so I will first state what we will get from the alliance. In short, Chungmuro isn't our 'target' station."

"How can I believe that?"

"You can believe it or not. But please think about it. If Chungmuro was our target, we would've dragged the main force of our station here. To be honest, the flagpoles are most vulnerable just after the station is open."

It wasn't very persuasive.

"What will you do if our target station is Dongdaemun?"

"Haha, there is no need to worry about that. We already know the station that is targeting us. We didn't come to you for no reason."

"I see. Let's clear the scenario by helping each other, since our targets are different... is that what you mean?"

"That's right. Isn't it good to help each other at this time?"

Kang Ilhun smiled and nodded. I was silent for a moment and Yoo Sangah opened her mouth.

"I have a question."

Kang Ilhun grinned at Yoo Sangah.

“Yes, what is it pretty girl?”

“Why did you come to Chungmuro? If you came from Dongdaemun, you could’ve made an alliance with other stations.”

It was an unexpectedly sharp point. Kang Ilhun looked slightly confused.

“Oh, that... as I told you, Chungmuro just opened. I mean... um, the other stations have already formed alliances. But I thought that Chungmuro wouldn’t have... haha, I have to ask, has Chungmuro already made an alliance?”

Hrmm...

“No, we haven’t.”

Kang Ilhun looked happy at my words.

“Then form an alliance with Dongdaemun. You won’t regret it. Above all, we have a ‘winning solution’ for this scenario.”

“A winning solution?”

“Yes, in fact, our group knows the hidden secrets of this scenario.”

Kang Ilhun grinned and drove in the last nail.

“We will tell you if you agree to an alliance with us.”



After a while, I sat with Yoo Sangah, Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon to exchange opinions. Yoo Sangah spoke.

“What do we do? Should we establish an alliance?”

“I’m going to disagree. I can’t believe them. I feel uneasy.”

Once Jung Heewon spoke, Lee Hyunsung gave his opinion.

“But it wouldn’t be bad if they have information about this scenario. Certainly, we can’t fully trust them as Heewon-ssi said...”

Finally, they looked at me. I shrugged.

“Then for now...”

Once we made a decision, we called over Kang Ilhun and the Dongdaemun Group, who were looking around Chungmuro Station.

“I will make a decision once I have met your representative.”

“Oh, is that so?”

“Where is your representative?”

“At Dongdaemun. If you don’t mind, I will guide you...”

“Please do so.”

We got on the back seats of the bikes they came on. The people I took with me were Lee Hyunsung, Yoo Sangah and Jung Heewon. Lee Gilyoung was left behind with Gong Pildu. It was because he overused Diverse Communication and hadn’t woken up yet. Of course, I didn’t forget to give an order to protect Lee Gilyoung.

“Then let’s go.”

There was the sound of the bikes turning on and we started moving. Once 20 seconds had passed. I opened my mouth.

“By the way Kang Ilhun-ssi.”

“Yes?”

“Those people, did they say anything else about Chungmuro?”

“Huh? What does tha...”

“For example, if you come here then there will be a very scary man called Yoo Jonghyuk...”

“Haha, what are you sayin...”

I gave a signal and our party jumped from the back seats of the bikes at the same time.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi!”

Yoo Sangah used Binding Thread and tied the four bikes together. There was a roar as the bikes collided with each other.

Kwaaaang!

“Aaaagh!”

The Dongdaemun members screamed as they crashed down.

Fortunately, our party was safely hanging in the air due to Yoo Sangah’s thread tied to the ceiling. It was a type of seat belt. It was an incredible feat that made Yoo Sangah seem like Spiderman.

Kang Ilhun was covered in dust as he lay on the ground and shouted.

“W-What are you doing?”

“What am I doing? That is what I want to ask.” I looked at the dark tunnel. “In order to ambush us, you should raise the level of the stealth a bit more.”

It was enough for me to detect despite not having Absolute Senses. Kang Ilhun noticed something was wrong and screamed.

“Attack them!”

At almost the same time, people hiding all over the tunnel emerged. I knew it. They were aiming for my flag.

[The character ‘Jung Heewon’ has activated the exclusive skill ‘Judgment Time.’]

[The Absolute Good constellations have agreed to the use of this skill.]

[‘Judgment Time’ has been activated.]

“Eh? I thought it might not... isn’t this a complete mess?”

Jung Heewon laughed with a surprised expression.

“It is hard to find bad people.”

Jung Heewon spoke in a cold voice and her sword flashed through the dark tunnel. Her eyes were red from using Demon Slayer. The bloody light swept through the darkness as people were slaughtered.

“W-What?”

“This crazy girl...! Aaaagh!”

Seokeok! Seokekeok!

There were 10 people but Jung Heewon killed them without a hitch. It was a scene that showed how much Jung Heewon's stats had risen after the hidden dungeon was cleared.

I also used White Pure Star Energy and easily suppressed Kang Ilhun. A few hours ago, I was dealing with Yoo Jonghyuk. This guy wasn't very difficult.

“Dokja-ssi, Chungmuro...!”

I looked back at Lee Hyunsung's cry and saw that there was a commotion in Chungmuro. They were ambushed as soon as we left Chungmuro. I left Kang Ilhun to be tied up by Yoo Sangah and rushed to Chungmuro.

There was already a melee happening on the platform. But I decided to watch the situation for a while. There was something I needed to check first.

“What are these bastards!”

Dozens of group members that ran from the Myeongdong direction waved weapons at the people of Chungmuro. By the way, the weapons they were carrying were familiar.

“That is Kim-ssi's weapon!”

The Landlord Alliance members who headed towards Myeongdong had already been hit by these guys. Indeed, the wanderers who lost their group were just seen as living

coins.

The most noticeable enemy was one wearing a red flag around his head like a bandana.

“Gain control later! It will be over if I just put the flag in!”

That’s right. He was the ‘representative.’

Chapter 45

Future War (4)

“Push through to the flag holder!”

Based on the direction he was running from, he seemed to be the representative of the Myeongdong Group. They had joined hands with Dongdaemun.

[The Myeongdong representative ‘Kim Hyuntae’ has used the additional effect of the ‘red flag’!]

It was someone who already changed the colour of the flag. Furthermore, it was ‘red.’

In fact, the key to ‘Struggle for the Flag’ was the colour of the flag. It was from white to red, navy, brown, purple and black. The flag provided increasingly better effects as the colour changed.

[The Myeongdong Group has received the buff effect of the red flag!]

[Attack and defense has increased by 5% each!]

If the flag was already red, it meant he had occupied one or more stations or had killed the flag bearer of another station.

Looking at his eyes, he seemed to have pretty good fighting power. But...

He shouldn’t have aimed for Chungmuro.

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ has activated ‘Armed Zone Lv. 6!]

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ has activated ‘Private Property Lv. 6!]

Gong Pildu didn’t move too late.

“Trivial pups...!”

I was glad I didn’t have to use the Command Rights. If this was the case, I could leave Chungmuro’s defense to Gong Pildu.

The eight mini-turrets fired at the same time towards the Myeongdong Group running towards the flagpole.

“W-What?”

“Owaaaaack!

Dududududu!

Pieces of flesh flew through the air. Gong Pildu was truly a scam.

“Kuuack! Huddle up!”

The Myeongdong group gathered together in a tight defense formation but it wasn't enough to endure the shells from the level 6 Armed Zone. It was a rewarding site that made leaving him to clear the Emergency Defense scenario alone worth it.

Kwang! Kwaang! Kwaaaang!

How many shots were fired? The enhanced magic bullets caused the Myeongdong Group to be riddled with holes and collapse. Gong Pildu was scary as an enemy but strong as an ally.

“T-There wasn't information about this!”

“Retreat!”

But there was no place for them to run away.

“Where are you going?”

[The special option of Unbroken Faith is activated.]

[The ether property is converted to 'fire.']

Chwaaaaak!

The ether blade made of flames created a wall of fire that blocked their escape. The moment that the confused people hesitated, Gong Pildu shot at them.

Dududududu!

“P-Pierce through! Quickl... cough!”

The Myeongdong representative was hit in the head by a magic bullet and the flag was released.

Gong Pildu’s eyes shone as he found the flag. Sheesh, this brat.

“Do you want me to step on your back again?”

The running Gong Pildu stiffened.

“Damn...”

I immediately picked up the Myeongdong flag that had fallen onto the tracks. Focus vanished from the eyes of the desperate Myeongdong Group members.

[You have won the flag of the ‘Myeongdong Group.’]

[Your white flag has absorbed the cumulative achievements of the red flag.]

[Your white flag has evolved into a red flag.]

I felt a stronger force swirling inside my body.

[You are one step closer to the King’s Road.]

The flags after the red flag improved not just the abilities representative but also the surrounding group members.

Apart from overall stats or S-grade and above items, the flag was one of the few ways to improve basic combat power. Due to this, groups aimed at stations other than the ‘target’ station.

The other ‘king candidates’ would’ve already entered a full-fledged war to change the colour of their flags.

The stronger they became, the more they could enjoy this world.

[The remaining members of the Myeongdong Group are waiting for your decision.]

I grabbed one of the wounded Myeongdong members in the area and asked.

“Why did you aim for Chungmuro?”

I had realized something when I first heard Kang Ilhun’s words. It was true that Chungmuro had just opened but it didn’t make sense for them to rush in like they had been waiting. The observations of the party and the strange look he made when he knew I was the representative...

These guys knew about this station from the beginning. I brought my blade to the man’s neck and asked.

“Tell me, who gave you the information of Chungmuro?”

The most likely people were the Prophets. The guys I met in Theatre Dungeon mentioned ‘hidden information’ that other people didn’t know.

I had been searching through Ways of Survival but I never saw the group name Prophets. If so, who were they?

There were two hypotheses.

One, due to an unknown variable, a new prophet had appeared apart from Anna Croft.

The second... besides me, there was another ‘reader’.

Honestly, I thought it was probably the latter. The ‘prophet’ attribute wasn’t so easy to obtain. Furthermore, Prophets was a plural...

Well, I could check it from now on.

I looked at Gong Pildu and said, “By the way... why didn’t you act more moderately?”

“Why should I show mercy to those running wild?”

Gong Pildu looked annoyed.

Unfortunately, the people of Myeongdong Group weren’t able to answer because they had been hit by too many bullets. As soon as I asked them a question, they coughed up blood and died.

In the end, I could only ask one person. I looked down at Kang Ilhun who was behind

guarded by Lee Hyunsung. His eyes rolled uneasily while he was tied up with Binding Thread.

Yoo Sangah asked, "Was everything planned from the beginning?"

"I thought there was a high probability. As soon as the station opens, two groups will unite and attack. It was a prior promise."

"Saying things with such a good face..."

Yoo Sangah's expression became dark.

"Are you sorry? There isn't going to be an alliance."

"...A little bit."

"Don't believe in people too much. Things won't be as easy as you think in the future."

"I know. Still... if possible, I wanted to believe. I was able to come here because I believed in someone."

Yoo Sangah looked at me.

"Hey, how long are the two of you going to talk? Quickly pry the information out."

Jung Heewon interrupted us. Indeed, now wasn't the time to give life advice. I released the thread blocking Kang Ilhun's mouth.

Kang Ilhun was trying to stay calm.

"...What will you do with me now?"

"It depends on how much information you can give me."

"Are you basing the standards on usability?"

This guy talked back even in this situation, there was more to him than I thought. If so, I had to use a hard-line method...

Jung Heewon said, "In any case, the constellations see him as 'wicked.' How about

trying torture?”

“Why bother with torture? Just kill him if he doesn’t speak.”

“Huh?”

I pulled out my sword without hesitation. Kang Ilhun trembled as he looked up at me.

“From now on, I will count to three. If you don’t open your mouth in that time, you will die. There is no reversal.”

I deliberately triggered White Pure Star Energy and inserted the sword into the ground.

“One.

Kudududuk!

The ground was scratched with the power of White Pure Star Energy as the blade started to move towards him. Fragments of the floor flew towards his face.

“Two.”

The heat of the blade warmed his face as it approached his nose. In a short time, the ether blade would cut his eyeballs.

“Three...”

“Dongmyo Station!”

I smiled. Torture? There was no need for that.

Kang Ilhun gasped for breath and explained, “...The people from Dongmyo Station gave us information about Chungmuro.”

Dongmyo, who was there?

“Who was it?”

“He called himself a Prophet...”

By the way, this guy's condition was strange. His eyes were rolling and his tongue hung out like a dead person. I had an ominous feeling.

Surely it wasn't 'Suggestion.'

"Yoo Sangah-ssi, hurry and block his mouth with a thread!"

Fortunately, Yoo Sangah's threat blocked this guy's mouth before it could close. Using Suggestion to control information from leaking... they were more meticulous than I thought.

On the other hand, it was easier for me to solve the problem. Suggestion was a skill that could only be used face-to-face.

I looked down at Kang Ilhun and stated.

"You are a lucky guy."

If he was present, I could definitely identify one of the Prophets.



Before I went on the full-fledged search, I headed to the roof of the theater.

"He still hasn't woken up?"

Maybe it was because she didn't know I was coming but Lee Jihye shook. Yoo Jonghyuk was still unconscious and lying on her knees.

Jerk, he was the main character yet he wasn't going through any hardship. Meanwhile, I was the tired one despite being the reader.

"How is it downstairs?"

"Don't worry and rest."

"Master... will he be okay?"

"He will be fine. Although there might be some trauma left."

“...Trauma?”

“His mental state is more fragile than a child’s. He will be a bit better after a good sleep.”

“It sounds like you know a lot.”

“I know him the best in this world.”

I spoke in a dry tone and pulled out some paper, writing on it with a pen. I filled it with notes and handed it to Lee Jihye.

“Don’t read it but give it to Yoo Jonghyuk when he wakes up. Do you understand?”

“...I understand.”

She said so but Lee Jihye would definitely read it. However, Lee Jihye wouldn’t be able to understand it since it was filled with things only Yoo Jonghyuk would know.

By the way, did the information on the paper also look like ■■■ for the constellations?

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ hates ■.]

Indeed. I was turning around when Lee Jihye opened her mouth.

“By the way, can I ask you something?”

“What?”

“Earlier, with Master. Master and Ahjussi...”

Somehow I seemed to know what Lee Jihye would say. Damn, Lee Jihye heard as well as Jung Heewon?

I’ve been stupid. I only considered the constellations and never thought about the humans listening. Yoo Jonghyuk would laugh at my stupidity.

What was a good excuse?

“Well, that. You two.”

“What?” I decided to feign ignorance.

Lee Jihye’s expression became more serious.

“I mean, Ahjussi’s words.”

“So what?”

“Wake up you jerk! Don’t fall into those sentiments!”

Lee Jihye imitated my voice and shouted. I felt embarrassed suddenly hearing my words emerge from someone else’s mouth.

“For the first time, that... that determination! Have you already forgotten?”

“...?”

Wasn’t something strange? This child, she almost heard it at the filtered level?

“I came here because of you! Why are you alone? We are together!”

“No, wait a minute.”

“I’ve always been around you! Don’t lose hope! Think of the child!”

“That isn’t what I...”

“Why did I come here if you are alone...!”

I stared at Lee Jihye for a moment.

...No, how could she hear it this way?

“S-Something like that? Ahjussi, you and Master...”

I sighed. “Think what you want.”

“...Indeed. Don’t worry, I’ll give him this love letter!”

I shrugged and turned around. Behind my back, Lee Jihye’s bullshit continued.

“Wait! How did you give birth to a child?”

“Ask Yoo Jonghyuk.”

Yes, Yoo Jonghyuk, I leave everything to you. The next moment, indirect messages exploded in my head.

[Some constellations are greatly affected by the truth of the filtering.]

[The constellation Prisoner of the Golden Headband respects your taste.]

[The constellation ‘Demon-like Judge of Fire’ likes your comradeship.]

[The constellation ‘Secretive Plotter’ thinks it is ridiculous.]

[600 coins have been sponsored.]

...Damn, there were other idiots. In any case, I told Yoo Jonghyuk what I needed to.

I hurried through the theater. During the time Yoo Jonghyuk was the sleeping prince, I had to gain as much benefits as possible.

Chapter 46

Future War (5)

After coming down from the theater, I headed straight to Myeongdong Station with Lee Hyunsung and Yoo Sangah. Dongmyo Station was important but there was something to be done first.

I killed the Myeongdong Representative and taken the flag so I had to hurry and occupy the empty station.

Lee Hyunsung spoke in a worried tone.

“Is it okay with just us?”

“There won’t be a fight. I will decide what to do with them. If I leave it alone, they will die soon.”

The ‘wanderers’ who lost their group would become prey to other groups if they weren’t lucky. Just like the Landlord Alliance members who left Chungmuro Station.

But the moment we arrived at Myeongdong Station, we saw an unexpected sight. The people in Myeongdong Station had already been hit by someone. It was also very gruesome.

I saw a group of men standing near Myeongdong Station. The men were flustered and quickly fled in the direction of Hoehyeong Station. It wasn’t easy to chase them because they had bikes.

It was as if they knew I was coming. There was more than one or two odd things.

Lee Hyunsung asked, “Who are these people? What happened?”

“I’m not sure.”

“Even Dokja-ssi doesn’t know...”

Lee Hyunsung gulped nervously. Fortunately, the flag holder of Myeongdong Station was empty.

[Currently there is no group occupying Myeongdong Station.]

[Are you sure you want to take over the station?]

I plugged the flag into the flag holder and pulled it out again. Then a flag that was the same as mine appeared in the flag holder.

[You have occupied Myeongdong Station.]

[A station that has been occupied can't be taken from you unless the 'main base' or flag is taken away.]

[Currently Occupied: Chungmuro (Main Base), Myeongdong]

[The achievement points of the red flag are rising.]

The red colour of the flag turned darker.

[Your influence has expanded by taking over a new station.]

[The hidden scenario has arrived!]

[The King's Road has begun!]

+

[Hidden Scenario – King's Road]

Category: Hidden

Difficulty: A

Clear Conditions: Take over a minimum of 10 stations within the time limit.

Time Limit: 10 days

Reward: The attribute of a 'king'.

Failure: If you can't take over a minimum of one station per day, you and your group members will all die.

+

I finally arrived at the terrible hidden scenario. Once I started this quest, I couldn't turn back. There were only two fates for a king.

Become a king or die.

[The new king candidate has started to walk along his road!]

From now on, it was the full-fledge flag struggle.



I returned to Chungmuro, gathered the party members and told them about the hidden scenario. Jung Heewon made an interested expression while Lee Hyunsung looked confused. Yoo Sangah was as anxious as always.

“It sounds like a difficult scenario... Dokja-ssi, will it be okay?”

“It’s okay.”

An angel or a fool... In this situation, they were worried rather than jealous about the hidden scenario.

Lee Hyunsung said, “I’m glad that Dokja-ssi is the king candidate.”

“Thank you.”

“Then should I call you Your Majesty?”

I was hit in the head by Jung Heewon after being touched by Lee Hyunsung’s serious words.

“I don’t want that.”

“Your Majesty, based on this hidden scenario, shouldn’t we go occupy a new station right away? You should think about the lives of your subjects.” Jung Heewon said sarcastically.

I nodded.

“I think we need to find out about the people who attacked us. I’ll go straight to Dongmyo. Jung Heewon-ssi and Lee Hyunsung-ssi, will you go with me?”

Yoo Sangah raised her hand at my words.

“Then I...”

“Yoo Sangah-ssi will stay here.”

“Ah, really... on the other hand, more...”

I listened to Yoo Sangah’s voice and it sounded glum. Perhaps Yoo Sangah was thinking that she was useless.

Her damage wasn’t as strong as Jung Heewon and she didn’t have a strong physique like Lee Hyunsung. In addition, she didn’t have a powerful trump card like Gilyoung.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi.”

“...Yes?”

All her previous ‘specs’ had become obsolete in this new world. But she was too good to be jealous of other people. Thus, her inferiority complex was quietly festering.

“Yoo Sangah, not everyone can do the same things well.”

“Yes, I am aware of that.” Yoo Sangah smiled weakly.

I spoke carefully so that she wouldn’t feel it was an admonishment. “Do you remember the words that you said on the subway? Dokja has a solo life and I will...”

“I will have an ivory life. Yes, I remember. I wrote it on the notepad of my smartphone.”

Why did she look so elated? In any case, I couldn’t hate it. I continued speaking.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi has things to do here. I can’t leave the unconscious Gilyoung alone. I need someone to monitor Gong Pildu and to control the nervous group members.”

Yoo Sangah’s eyes shook.

“Besides, the Hoehyeon forces must be kept in check. They might attack while we’re away. Gong Pildu is here but Yoo Sangah’s Binding Thread might be necessary.”

“C-Can I do this role well...?”

Yoo Sangah spoke weakly because of her low self-esteem.

“Hey everyone. In that way... I will give Yoo Sangah-ssi a job position. What do you think?”

Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon thought for a moment before nodding.

“Okay, I can trust it if it is Yoo Sangah.”

“King... if you wish then do so...”

I glared at Jung Heewon. Did she think that was funny right now?

[You are using the unique permissions of a representative.]

[Chungmuro Station’s representative, Kim Dokja is transferring some of his authority to group member ‘Yoo Sangah.’]

[Group member ‘Yoo Sangah’ has become the deputy of Chungmuro Station.]

[In the future, group member ‘Yoo Sangah’ can deal out punishments on behalf of the representative.]

Yoo Sangah looked at me with stunned eyes and stuttered. She looked terrified.

“G-Giving, giving this position to me...”

“I will leave it to Yoo Sangah-ssi.”

I meant it. Once again, not everyone could do the same things well. Based on what I remembered, Yoo Sangah would be appropriate for this.

Yoo Sangah was the best person in the human resources department, not someone else.

“Oh... I’ll do my best.”

Yoo Sangah bowed before slowly raising her head. Tears could be seen in her eyes.



We headed straight for the tunnel on the east side.

We had to pass three stops before arriving at Dongmyo. We moved with the fainted Kang Ilhun. Honestly, taking this guy was a burden but I needed him to identify the faces. When I looked back at Chungmuro, I could hear Yoo Sangah’s voice.

“Everyone, please gather!”

As I expected, Yoo Sangah worked harder in the shadows. The people were already organized and were receiving their orders. Sentries were set up and people were put in charge of different areas. Some of the landlords said they wouldn't listen to Yoo Sangah but...

[Chungmuro Station's deputy, Yoo Sangah has used the punishment.]

I vaguely heard someone moaning.

...Was this okay? Well, it should be fine.

Jung Heewon looked at my face and said, "Good job. I felt that Yoo Sangah had been a bit depressed."

"I didn't select Yoo Sangah-ssi because I was thinking of her emotions. I thought Yoo Sangah-ssi would do really well."

"...Ah, is that so? Then please me something later. It should fit me."

"How about an executioner?"

"...Forget it."

Jung Heewon grumbled and turned her head away. It was good after all the jokes she played.

"But that gangster on the roof, is it okay to leave him?"

"Oh, you mean Yoo Jonghyuk?"

"I guess his name is similar."

"It will probably be fine."

"It sounds like you know him very well. What is it?"

"That..." I thought for a moment before asking. "Heewon-ssi, do you have a younger sibling?"

"...? Yes. Why?"

"A brother or a sister?"

"A brother."

"How old is he?"

"He is one year younger."

"How is it having a brother?"

"Annoying. He easily defies me and I had to take him to school instead of my mother..."

Jung Heewon feel silent as she was complaining about her brother. She gazed somewhere in the air. Then I asked her.

"But now you are worried about him right?"

"Well... we are family."

"I am similar."

"Dokja-ssi also has a younger brother?"

"Nope, I'm talking about Yoo Jonghyuk."

"Ah..." Jung Heewon looked at me and nodded. "Then do you like or hate him?"

"I hate him. I fought with many people because of him."

I wasn't the only reader of Ways of Survival in the early days. Quite a few people followed along out of curiosity up to the 10th chapter. There were also 12 readers at the 50th chapter.

There was a guy who liked Kim Namwoon... while I argued with him. I wonder if any of the people who fought with me back then were alive. Maybe the people I was going to catch now was one of them.

"You two, you seem to have become very close."

Lee Hyunsung interrupted and I suddenly realized I was walking too close to Jung

Heewon.

Jung Heewon smiled.

“Why, soldier ahjussi. Are you jealous?”

“Hrmm. It isn’t like that...”

Come to think of it, didn’t Lee Hyunsung join the army right after going to a male high school? I felt sorry for Lee Hyunsung when I thought about the setting.

“It seems we have arrived at Dongdaemun History and Culture Park Station.”

In fact, the entrance of Dongdaemun History and Culture Park Station could be seen in the distance.

We nervously stuck to the tunnel wall and looked around. It was in case troops were waiting. But this worry was pointless. Jung Heewon muttered.

“It is strange. There are no sentries.”

The fact that there was no guards while Struggle for the Flag was ongoing meant that the station had already been eaten by another group. Once we confirmed this, we immediately approached the flag holder.

[The station has already been occupied by ‘Dongmyo Station.’]

[If you want to occupy the station, take the flag of Dongmyo Station or occupy its flag holder.]

It was as expected.

Then Kang Ilhun’s body twitched. His body was shaking like he was having seizures and his condition was strange. I released the thread blocking his mouth and Kang Ilhun shouted.

“N-No...!”

“...What is this all of a sudden?”

“D-Dongdaemun... Dongdaemun Station...!”

Saliva spilled from Kang Ilhun's mouth as he stuttered. I felt something and unintentionally put a hand on his shoulder.

Then.

[The character Kang Ilhun is now a wanderer.]

It was evident that Kang Ilhun's affiliation to 'Dongdaemun' had changed. Jung Heewon asked, "What is happening?"

"It seems that Dongdaemun Station has been taken over."

"...Huh?"

Suddenly everything made sense. Yes. The people who leaked the information had this in mind.

"...A double trap."

They incited the Myeongdong Group and Dongdaemun Group to strike Chungmuro because they knew the two groups would die in Chungmuro. While the main force were gone, they wanted to take Myeongdong and Dongdaemun. The unidentified people at Myeongdong Station probably also belonged to them.

But... how did they know we would win? They couldn't know about my presence. The representative of Chungmuro Station in the third turn was originally...

...Ah right. That jerk. Was this what they aimed for?

I was certain. The Prophets who created this plan were surely...

At this moment, Lee Hyunsung reacted.

"People are coming."

A group of people were approaching from the Dongdaemun tunnel. On the surface, they were a group with a considerably good weapons.

The items seemed to have an average of a C-grade or above. It wouldn't be easy to arm them to this degree already... it was unbelievable power.

The man in the centre of the group spoke to us first. The man had a slim build and wore all types of items on his arms and neck.

“Eh, Kang Ilhun-ssi? Geez, you brought a needless load of crap to me.”

Kang Ilhun was shaking and he fainted with foam around his mouth. I wondered, perhaps this guy?

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

A moment later, amazing messages were heard.

[The information of this person can't be read in 'Character List.']

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

Look at this?

The man looked at us. “Is there going to be a self-introduction? Or...”

The group of men simultaneously pulled out weapons.

I took the lead to reply. “We are from Chungmuro.”

“Chungmuro?”

At this moment, sparks popped in the air.

[Someone is using Explore Attribute on you.]

[The exclusive skill Fourth Wall has blocked Explore Attribute!]

The man stumbled like he had been shocked. He hesitated for a moment before turning bewildered eyes towards me.

“...I'm sorry, what is your name?”

I glanced at Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung once. Then I smiled and said towards the man. I spoke in my coldest and heaviest voice.

“I am Yoo Jonghyuk.”

Chapter 47

Future War (6)

It wasn't an illusion. The guy's eyes instantly widened when he heard my name.

"Don't tell me...?"

He carefully observed my face. That reminded me, what was the description of Yoo Jonghyuk in *Ways of Survival*? There wasn't a detailed appearance but the word 'handsome' was attached. And my face...

Could this be considered a fictional allowance?

"What is it?"

"Ah, nothing."

His tone became politer. I didn't know what was going on in there but his head was probably in a complicated state right now.

At least one thing was certain. The man in front of me had clearly read *Ways of Survival*.

I became more certain because he wasn't registered in Character List and he was surprised to hear Yoo Jonghyuk's name.

His eyes urgently returned to Lee Hyunsung by my side.

It was inspecting the attribute... I see. Was he digging up information? I deliberately gave him some time to observe Lee Hyunsung before opening my mouth.

"Impertinent person. You better move your eyes carefully."

"...Heok?"

He confirmed Lee Hyunsung's name and also noticed that he could view my character

window with Detect Attributes. I didn't know how far he had read in Ways of Survival but there were a few characteristics that could be used to identify Yoo Jonghyuk.

One of them was the SS skill, Sage's Eyes which allowed for universal detection and protection against detection skills. Now he would be convinced that I had Sage's Eyes.

"Did you think I wouldn't know that you peeked at me with a B-grade skill?"

The spasms started from the man's eyes and spread through his face.

Then his eyes wandered to the red flag I carried on my back. It was as I guessed. There were limits to the evidence that he could find about Yoo Jonghyuk.

"You son of a bitch...!"

One of the men in the group hadn't figured out the situation and pointed a spear at me. The moment that Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung was about to come forward.

Peeok!

The man's head burst and red blood splattered like a fountain. The group immediately screamed. From beyond the blood, I saw a serious looking man.

...Look at this bastard? He slowly walked through the crowd towards me.

"I'm sorry. Such a distinguished person had to see a horrible sight."

"Who are you?"

The man tried to manage his expression at my cold tone. He was pretty good. If I was him, I would like like my heart was going to burst.

"I will formally introduce myself. My name is Lee Sungkook. I am the deputy in charge of Dongmyo Station."

This guy approached and bowed before me. I liked it. Then I started the full-fledged Yoo Jonghyuk cosplay.

After I snapped at him, I opened my mouth and spoke in a cold voice.

“Dongmyo Station? I see. Then get out.”

“...Huh?”

“This is my station from now on so get out.”

This guy’s mouth dropped open.

“What...”

“You aren’t going to listen to me?”

I looked down at the flag holder that had the Dongmyo flag. Lee Sungkook belatedly understood my point.

“T-That is impossible. You can’t transfer a station already occupied...”

“Do you think I’m a fool? You are the deputy.”

“Yes?”

“If you have the authority of a deputy, the station can be transferred at will. You didn’t know?”

“...!”

“If you don’t take it out by the time I count to three, I will cut your neck. One.”

Lee Sungkook’s face stiffened. The men slowly surrounded me, giving off a nasty atmosphere. Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung were nervous because they didn’t know why I was suddenly doing such a crazy thing. I continued speaking.

“Does it sound like I am joking? Two.”

Was it hard to remember after reading the novel 10 years ago? It looked like he forgot who Yoo Jonghyuk was. Then I had to jog his memory.

[The exclusive skill ‘White Pure Star Energy Lv. 2’ has been activated.]

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

Chiiiiing!

I saw Lee Sungkook's pale face beyond the burning white blade. This was a game of chicken.

Remembering Yoo Jonghyuk meant he knew a bit about who Yoo Jonghyuk was.

If he knew how ruthless the early Yoo Jonghyuk was then he would never be able to continue this game.

If he didn't know Yoo Jonghyuk properly? Then it didn't matter. I would play the game and run away if we were going to lose. Now I had enough strength.

At this moment, Lee Sungkook hurriedly shouted.

"W-Wait a minute! I-I'll give it to you!"

This brat, he had read Ways of Survival. But he didn't read it properly.

"No need."

"...Huh?"

"You answered too late."

"Yes?"

"This place isn't enough. Give me Dongdaemun as well."

Jung Heewon made an astonished expression by my side. She looked like she was ready to act. But she couldn't go out.

No, I had to act. Because I was now Yoo Jonghyuk. I had to speak more nonsense in order to make him believe I was Yoo Jonghyuk.

I aimed my sword at Lee Sungkook and declared.

"If you don't do this, there won't be a deal."

"B-But...!"

“I will count to three again. One.”

Lee Sungkook’s expression changed in real time. He was starting to believe that I was Yoo Jonghyuk. The protagonist of a novel was standing in front of him.

How would he cope? The way he acted here would determine my relationship with these guys in the future.

“I-I can give you Dongdaemun History and Culture Park! But...”

“But?”

“I don’t have the authority to hand over Dongdaemun... if you don’t mind, would you like to meet our representative?”

It was a great response. It was just the level of prey that I wanted.

Lee Sungkook kept on talking.

“Yoo Jonghyuk-nim’s reputation is well-known. Our representative will be greatly looking forward to seeing Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. Please give our group a chance to talk with Yoo Jonghyuk-nim.”

“You know me?”

“How can I not know Yoo Jonghyuk-nim?”

Lee Sungkook shut his mouth the moment he said this. He thought he said something strange. Yoo Jonghyuk couldn’t be famous this early on.

“A-Anyway, it will be an honour if you accompany me.”

I stared at him and replied. Yes, this level was acceptable.

“Okay, show me the way.”

Lee Sungkook’s expression brightened and he added useless words.

“Don’t worry. I swear on the King’s Honour that I won’t harm Yoo Jonghyuk-nim.”

[Dongmyo Station's deputy, Lee Sungkook has sworn on the King's Honour.]
[If he breaks this vow, Lee Sungkook can be punished by you.]

What a great guy. But he did the right thing if he really thought I was Yoo Jonghyuk.
Wasn't his understanding of Yoo Jonghyuk better than I expected?

Then he would pay for it.

"Hurt me? You guys?"

"Of course, none of us can lay a finger on Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. Ha, haha. Then... this way."

"Just a minute."

"Yes?"

I pointed to the flag holder.

"Give me that."

"..."

[You have received the transfer of Dongdaemun History and Culture Park.]
[Currently Occupied: Chungmuro (Main Base), Myeongdong, Dongdaemun History and Culture Park]
[The achievement points of the red flag are rising.]

The flag was changing before my eyes.

It was a good start.

No, wasn't this too easy?

"Then let's go."

I watched Lee Sungkook's shaking shoulders and felt strange.

Wouldn't it be okay to continue living as Yoo Jonghyuk?

We were guided by Lee Sungkook towards Dongmyo Station.

The Dongmyo members didn't know my identity but Lee Sungkook's attitude was so stubborn that they couldn't protest.

I walked with my party at the rear of the group. Lee Hyunsung hesitated before looking at me and opening his mouth.

"Excuse me, Dokj..."

Kuk!

Jung Heewon noticed quickly and hit Lee Hyunsung's stomach. There was the sound of wind being blown from the lungs and Lee Hyunsung moaned.

As expected from Jung Heewon. She didn't know the exact situation but she knew how to match the mood.

I muttered out of the side of my mouth.

'You know what to do without me telling you?'

'Yes, roughly.'

I watched Jung Heewon and then Kang Ilhun being carried by Lee Hyunsung. The most important person right now was that guy.

'Make sure to restrain that guy. Understood?'

Jung Heewon nodded and made a strange gesture. She kneeled in front of me and cried out in an exaggerated voice.

"Yes Jonghyuk! I will do as you say!"

Anyone who saw it would think about medieval knights. The funny thing was that the surprised Lee Hyunsung did the same thing.

"I-I will do as you say...!"

Lee Sungkook, at the head of the group, was surprised to hear these two voices. It was embarrassing but the result was good. I couldn't read Lee Sungkook's inner thoughts but it would be like this if I could read it.

"He must be Yoo Jonghyuk."

Lee Sungkook met my gaze and quickly turned his head back to the front. This was how a main character felt.

Not long afterwards, we arrived at Dongmyo Station.

They were a pretty powerful group seeing as many people were on the platform. There were some people with weapons like Lee Sungkook's group, but most of them didn't have any.

They were probably wanderers from other stations who lost their group.

"Move faster!"

"I-I understand."

They were slaughtering the ground rats while being supervised by the Dongmyo members or disassembling the corpses of the monsters to make equipment.

The so-called 'slave' class. It was a common scenery in the age of kings.

Jung Heewon frowned.

"This isn't a real kingdom..."

I spoke to Jung Heewon.

"Don't be disgusted. Wait here and look at the situation."

"Yesss..."

I'm ignoring Jung Heewon and started to observe the surroundings. It was to take into account additional variables.

Dongmyo was quite important in the original novel. If I remembered correctly... the

representative of this place was the ‘invalid.’

But the story was likely to have changed if the Prophets intervened. I looked at the back of Lee Sungkook’s head.

At this point, I had two questions. One, did Lee Sungkook have his own text version? Two, how many prophets were there?

And if I had to say a third question, did they have the same ‘skills’ as me...

It didn’t seem like it. Otherwise he would’ve used Character List instead of Detect Attributes at the beginning.

Besides, he didn’t seem to have the Fourth Wall when I used Character List. In other words, he was a case like Lee Gilyoung.

Well, I read over 3,000 chapters. It would be unfair if they received the same perks as me when they only read a few chapters.

Speaking of which, I don’t think they had a text version...

By the way, what was this person looking so hard at? Lee Sungkook was looking at his smartphone.

[5,000 coins have been invested in agility.]

[Agility Lv. 20 -> Agility Lv. 30]

[An amazing agility lies in your body.]

I approached Lee Sungkook like a ghost.

“What are you looking at so hard?”

“H-Huh? It is nothing!”

The guy hurriedly hid his smartphone. It was a flash but I saw the screen. A yellow background and familiar speech bubbles.

I felt a sense of discomfort. If my eyes weren’t wrong... I had definitely seen a chat room on the screen.

...The Internet? Right here?

Chapter 48

Future War (7)

The Internet, it wasn't possible.

Since the scenario started, the Internet had been shut down all over Seoul due to the activation of the dokkaebi channels.

No, wait a minute. This was Dongmyo Station. Ah... right. Then the Internet was possible?

Lee Sungkook looked at me with an uneasy expression and opened his mouth.

"Excuse me, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim?"

"What?"

"We've arrived. The representative is waiting inside."

I saw a medium-sized tent roughly set up in the middle of the platform. The representative had an assortment of goods.

"Let's go."

Lee Sungkook bowed his head and guided me. The inside of the tent was quite luxurious. It was unbelievably luxurious for such a shabby tent.

There was a red carpet and a bed that seemed to have been stolen from a luxury hotel. There was a round table for a meeting and a small desk with a computer.

The most interesting thing was the boy concentrated on surfing the Internet. The face seemed only a few years older than Gilyoung. The boy had dark circles and sat on the chair in his pajamas.

And there was a navy blue flag held tightly in his arms. Amazing. This boy had already passed the halfway mark of the King's Road.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[Character Information]

Name: Han Donghoon

Age: 17 years old

Constellation Support: Shadow behind the Curtain

Private Attribute: Noble Invalid Hermit (Hero)

Exclusive skills: Wide-area Internet Lv. 5, Comments Manipulation Lv. 3, Keyboard Attack Lv. 3, Small Eater Lv. 6, Sound Wave Blocking Lv. 2...

Stigma: Lack of Presence Lv. 2

Overall Stats: Physique Lv. 10, Strength Lv. 10, Agility Lv. 19, Magic Power Lv. 26.

Overall Evaluation: A person who is the peak of the Noble Invalid Hermit type. His Wide-area Internet skill installs a virtual LAN cable to specific devices through the dokkaebi channels.

He has an amazing ability to incite public opinion but has weak mental defenses. The sponsor is very dissatisfied with the circumstances of his present incarnation.

* Currently under a powerful hypnosis.

I clearly remembered. Dongmyo's king. Maybe this boy would soon become the Hermit King of Shadows. The poor boy king was busy replying to Internet comments.

-Is it true that Seoul is now isolated? ⇨ ⇨ Gangnam land prices will fall ~~ Are the rich people crying??

└└└ It isn't just Seoul but all the capitals in the world. Tokyo, Beijing, all of them are trapped in that dome.

└ Isn't there a plan to recapture Seoul? Didn't it start yesterday?

-⇨ ⇨ ⇨ But now all the people inside have awakened powers ⇨ ⇨ ⇨ It isn't a crazy fantasy.

└ It became a fantasy the moment the monsters appeared.

The long-familiar Internet screen looked weird. I once again felt it was real. Indeed. This was the situation we were in now. On the outside of the dome, many people still didn't know the truth.

The boy king's fingers started to move.

-You guys, have you ever heard of the Prophets? I don't know what they are but they claim to know the secrets of this situation ㅎ ㅎ

[Character 'Han Donghoon' has activated Comments Manipulation Lv. 3.]

As soon as the activation message popped up, dozens of comments appeared under the boy's one.

└ *Who would believe that?*

└ *I thought that as well, but not anymore... I saw a prophecy not long ago and it all came true.* ㄷ ㅇ

└ ㄷ ㅇ ? (TL: short form for 'real') *Where is their place of action? Shoot me the address.*

The comment started to spread all over the Internet with tremendous power. It was surprising. They were already using the ability this way.

"Representative Han Donghoon?"

Lee Sungkook called out and the boy raised his head.

"A guest has come. Greet him."

The boy, Han Donghoon's sunken eyes turned to me.

"H, He, H, Hell... o."

Han Donghoon wasn't in a normal state.

This boy, who was called the 'Seventh King of Seoul' in Ways of Survival now looked so haggard. Originally, he avoided humans due to his nature but it wasn't this much.

Han Donghoon staggered up and sat on a chair at the round table, biting at his nails.

Lee Sungkook smiled as if he was satisfied.

"Now Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. Let's start the talk with the representative in earnest."

I gazed at Han Donghoon and laughed.

“Talk? What talk?”

“Huh?”

“Are you joking with me right now?”

Han Donghoon’s eyes were blank.

“...This is the representative?”

Obviously, the boy was the representative of this station. In name. But...

The word representative didn’t meant in ‘reality.’

“How long are you going to make fun of me? You want to make me talk with a doll?”

I looked back and saw Lee Sungkook’s hands shaking. He probably didn’t think that Sage’s Eyes would find out. He opened the smartphone to check something and sighed.

“...Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, I’m not usually like this. Please forgive me.”

“You are the real power of this station. Isn’t that right?”

“Yes.”

“How many other people know?”

“Only a few top executives.”

Setting up a person with a strong ability as a scarecrow and taking control of the station. It was a strategy often used in Ways of Survival but it was strange to see it in reality.

“If you are the real power, why did you bring me here?”

“It was to avoid the attention of other people. I don’t know if you have realized, but there is a Sound Wave Blocking skill around the tent.”

I had expected it. In fact, this was one of Han Donghoon's abilities.

"It must be really important."

"That's correct. Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, it is important for you and for all of us."

"All of you?"

Lee Sungkook took a deep breath and opened his mouth.

"I'm a Prophet. To be precise, I am one of them."

The information I wanted was finally coming out. I waited silently for his next words.

"Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, you will never know the enormous joy we are feeling right now. My colleagues and I have been waiting for this day of great victory for Yoo Jonghyuk-nim."

Did I hear wrong? This guy started speaking strange words.

"We know about Yoo Jonghyuk-nim's special ability. A miracle that allows you to go back to the past after dying. In this world, only Yoo Jonghyuk-nim received such special power!"

I was a bit nervous about the constellations' filtering but I decided to keep listening.

"Maybe Yoo Jonghyuk-nim has already repeated a few lives. You have fought against terrible enemies and struggled against the beings of this world to save people. Enduring alone, lonely memories... We respect your sublime spirit."

This jerk, such skillful flattery. Yoo Jonghyuk would be moved to tears if he heard. Later when he was depressed, I would have to tell him these words.

"But Yoo Jonghyuk-nim should've realized it from your past regressions. Even if you have an outstanding miracle, you alone can't fight against the disasters that will come."

Plus, he was right.

"Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, this time will be different. It is because we are here. We Prophets have received a special blessing and have been sent to help you."

Wow, look at this?

Lee Sungkook smiled faintly.

“You must be wondering. Why did these guys who didn’t appear last time suddenly show up now? It is very confusion but I hope you can trust us. It is because we have already received a revelation for this day 10 years ago.”

“...Revelation?”

“Yes. In our world, there is a ‘revelation’ that is secretly shared among the Prophets. Yoo Jonghyuk exists in it and is a living myth. It is a single revelation that records all of the past and future.

Wait. Don’t tell me ‘that’ was the revelation?

“You don’t believe me yet. We already knew that Yoo Jonghyuk-nim would gather Lee Hyunsung. They didn’t come with you but you probably already have Delusion Demon Kim Namwoon and Maritime Admiral Lee Jihye. But that isn’t enough. At the very least, according to the revelation...”

I hid my nervousness and asked.

“Where is the revelation?”

“Unfortunately, it has been damaged and we can’t find the original. Don’t worry. We each remember a fragment of the revelation. Through these fragments, we are prepared to walk the right path with you.”

...Ohu.

“If you live again the way you have always done, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim... will die again. But it will be different with us.”

Lee Sungkook was going in circles. I slowly closed my eyes and said, “I see.”

Lee Sungkook hurriedly stopped talking. Maybe he was nervous. Yoo Jonghyuk had Lie Detection.

Of course, I didn’t have this skill. But even if I did, his story wouldn’t get caught by Lie

Detection. It was because Lie Detection couldn't distinguish such falsehoods.

That's why I felt it even more.

"...It is surprising."

It was true. I was shocked beyond surprise. This was a great 'setting.' A setting that was squeezed out in a short amount of time. Human creativity was really great.

"You are called Sungkook?"

"Yes, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim."

I could write the book Ways of Survival. In order to help the hero who kept dying, readers received a revelation and came from outside the novel? This was more exciting than the real Ways of Survival. But that was it.

"Don't go around in circles."

This was it.

"Get straight to the point."

I heard the set up so it was time to speak.

"You have received the revelation of the future. Then what exactly are you going to do?"

Lee Sungkook quickly replied.

"We would like to form an alliance with Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. I-It is an alliance in name but it actually means going under you..."

He was a funny guy. In the end, this was his purpose? Riding the bus that was the main character?

"I see. An alliance. You want this."

"Yes."

“It is an interesting suggestion.”

“This means...”

I tapped my fingers against the table.

“But the order is wrong.”

“Huh?”

“How can I form an alliance with people whose identities I don’t know? If you want to ally with me, isn’t this the first thing you should start with?”

“M-My identity... I already...”

I got up from the chair and sat on the plush bed in the room. Then I crossed my legs and declared.

“Kneel down.”

“Huh?”

“Kneel.”

Lee Sungkook was embarrassed for a moment before getting down from his chair while hiding his expression. As his knees slowly reached the floor, I opened my mouth.

“Tell me your attribute.”

Once I saw the strong hypnosis on the king candidate, I guessed this guy’s attribute. However, I needed to make sure.

Lee Sungkook looked up at me with complicated eyes. His mind was probably working hard. He would think this.

“Yoo Jonghyuk can see my information with Sage’s Eyes.”

“He already knows it so what is the reason for asking about my information?”

Lee Sungkook struggled for a moment before speaking.

“My attribute is... Hypnotist.”

As expected, it was Hypnotist.

“I see.”

Lee Sungkook looked a bit brighter at my nod. He thought he had passed a test.

“Is that all?”

“...Huh?”

Lee Sungkook’s eyes shook.

“...O-One more.”

I nodded.

“Tell me.”

“T-The 9th...

“The 9th?”

Lee Sungkook slowly lowered his head like he was ashamed.

“The 9th person... to get off.”

I see. This brat, the 9th...

...No, wait. Then how many people were there?

Chapter 49

Night of the Prophets (1)

“The 9th person to get off... it is the first time I’ve heard of this attribute.”

“Oh, you probably wouldn’t have. This is the first time us Prophets have seen it.”

This brat was giving an excuse. I wanted to tease him a bit.

“But it is strange. If you really received the revelation, why aren’t you a ‘revelator’ instead of ‘someone who got off’? What is with this name?”

“T-That... the revelation... no, the book of revelation...”

Lee Sungkook stuttered. It was delightful watching him try to avoid Lie Detection. I wondered how honest he could be. Lee Sungkook finally closed his eyes.

“When I read the book of revelation... I stopped!”

“You stopped reading it? Why didn’t you read it?”

“The contents of the Book of Revelations are very difficult, vast and profound...”

“Then you were the 9th person to get off?”

“Yes...”

“I don’t think that will be of much help to me.”

“N-No! I can definitely help you!”

The confused Lee Sungkook continued to speak gibberish while uneasily turning his smartphone off and on.

“Why do you keep touching that smartphone?”

“I-I-I’m sorry. I am a smartphone addict...”

He was trying to get advice from the other ones who got off. But that didn’t last long.

“Are you going on the Internet?”

“Y-Yes, that’s right. It is the ability of the hermit...”

At Lee Sungkook’s words, I looked towards Han Donghoon. The hypnotized boy was busy tearing at his fingernails with empty eyes.

The Hermit King of Shadows who had the powerful information manipulation ability. This boy couldn’t be kept under the prophets.

If the Prophets became involved in the story in this way, the original novel was ruined and the plans I set up would be wasted. I had to stop these guys before everything went wrong.

“Do the other prophets also have the attribute of ‘getting off’?”

“...Yes.”

“How many are there in total?”

“That...” Lee Sungkook hesitated for a moment before opening his mouth. “As far as I know, there are 48 people.”

48 people? It was smaller than I thought.

Considering that chapter 1,200 had one hit and chapter 120 had 10 hits, I thought there would be at least 100 people.

Lee Sungkook’s words resolved my curiosity.

“I know there were more prophets originally but I expect most of them didn’t pass the first scenario.”

“They are dead despite knowing the future?”

“That... we have received the revelation but we only recently realized that it was a

‘true’ revelation.”

Now it made a little sense.

Perhaps at the start of the scenario, few readers thought that a novel that started serialization 10 years ago would become a reality. They might not remember it straight away.

I thought it was strange that Lee Sungkook survived. Furthermore, this guy was the ninth person to stop reading so he was literally one of the earliest readers. Then how did he survive?

“I fortunately survived the carriage. If it hadn’t been for another prophet nearby, I would’ve died.”

Another prophet in the same place as him?

“That—”

The moment that Lee Sungkook was about to speak, the ground slightly shook. The vibration was transmitted despite Sound Wave Blocking.

Lee Sungkook and I ran out of the tent at the same time.

Kung!

I thought it was a sudden sub scenario but that wasn’t it. Two people stood in the centre of the epicenter. The man and woman facing each other. I didn’t know the man but the other person was...

“You aren’t a supporting role... yet you dare to push me?”

“What are you talking about, you dog-like jerk.”

...Not surprisingly, it was Jung Heewon.

“What? Dog...? You bitch!”

The man grabbed a very large ring sword from his back. His overall level seemed in line with Jung Heewon’s. But it wasn’t enough.

Jung Heewon movements were already above incarnations of the same class. Jung Heewon's blade moved lightly as the man attacked.

[The character 'Jung Heewon' has activated the special option of Mikazuki Munechika, "Death God's Footsteps'...]

"Jung Heewon!"

Jung Heewon stopped his black just before she cut off the man's head. The hairs were rising on the man's neck.

It was a tremendous difference in speed. If I hadn't intervened, the man would be dead.

The startled Lee Sungkook cried out, "Jung Minseob! What are you doing now?"

I realized it when I saw Lee Sungkook's confusion.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

Then the expected message popped up.

[The information of this person can't be read in 'Character List.']

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

That's right. He was also a Prophet.



After a while, another prophet was on his knees in front of me, with Lee Sungkook next to him.

"I'm sorry, my friend didn't know anything... Hey, apologize quickly!"

The man sitting beside him bowed towards me.

"...I'm sorry."

Unlike Lee Sungkook. he was a very prideful person and couldn't completely remove the anger from his face. I looked at Jung Heewon and said,

“Jung Heewon, I told you not to be reckless.”

“T-This bastard...!”

“Jung Heewon!”

Jung Heewon made a surprised expression for the first time.

“...I’m sorry, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim.”

Jung Heewon bowed and turned to leave, Lee Hyunsung following her with a strange expression. I knew that Jung Heewon wasn’t the type to raise a sword to someone for no reason.

However, it was dangerous to move in this current situation.

The other man looked at me and asked, “Are you really Yoo Jonghyuk-nim?”

“Yes, are you also a prophet?”

“...Yes.”

There was a complicated expression on his face. He looked between me, Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung. Then he glanced at Lee Sungkook and said.

“Excuse me, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. I’m sorry but I’m afraid I’ll have to leave you for a moment. Sungkook, talk with me for a minute.”

He left the tent while Lee Sungkook bowed to me.

“I won’t wait long.”

“Yes!”

It wouldn’t be like this if it was the original Yoo Jonghyuk. But I had a reason for allowing them to talk. As soon as Lee Sungkook left the tent, I immediately called to Bihyung.

‘Hey Bihyung.’

[What is it? Having fun again...]

‘Hearing enhancement, 2,000 coins.’

[.....]

Now Bihyung had adapted. It took less than three seconds before an advertisement went up.

[2,000 coins have been consumed.]

[The exclusive skill ‘Hearing Enhancement’ has been acquired.]

Bihyung warned.

[Hey, be careful from the fourth scenario onwards. For such a wide-scale scenario, the intermediate dokkaebis have jurisdiction...]

I ignored Bihyung’s words.

[The exclusive skill ‘Hearing Enhancement Lv. 1’ is activated.]

I moved my body outside the tent blocked by Sound Wave Blocking. Then voices started to be heard. They weren’t too far from where I was hiding.

“Hey, isn’t it slightly strange?”

“What?”

“Do you see that as a handsome face?”

“What are you talking about suddenly...?”

“The author said that Yoo Jonghyuk was handsome.”

This bastard? Fortunately, Lee Sungkook dismissed it.

“The author might have different tastes... He is Yoo Jonghyuk for sure. He has the same dirty nature.”

“You only got off at the 9th chapter, what do you know...?”

“This...! You don’t really remember it since you read it a long time ago!”

“Still, aren’t some scenes pretty clear with the ‘Memory Benefits? Would you even remember the prologue without this privilege? You might not be alive if it wasn’t for me...”

Their voices were coming closer.

“It is weird no matter how I look at it. Setting aside Lee Hyunsung, who is that strange woman? If I remember correctly, there wasn’t such a woman in the third regression.”

“Then check it. See if he is really Yoo Jonghyuk.”

“...But what if he is real?”

“We will go according to plan. If we get Yoo Jonghyuk here, we can deal with those who read until the 50th chapter.”

Some really good information was coming in. Despite wanting to hug onto the main character, these guys were unleashing all types of curse words because of their situation. This was why they were humans.

Lee Sungkook and the man was coming closer.

“I apologize for the long wait. Let’s go inside.”

We went back into the tent.

“Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. I apologize for my previous disrespect. I will greet you again. I am Jung Minseob.”

The man smiled and bowed.

Once again, this guy had pretty good items for being beaten by Jung Heewon. In particular, there was the useful Fugitive’s Mask which allowed the user to freely change their face and appearance.

I cut to the chase.

“Then where did you get off?”

Jung Minseob glared at Lee Sungkook. He seemed to be saying something with his eyes.

“...The 1,089th person to get off.”

1,089. Considering the number of views for chapter 1,200 was 1 and the number of views for chapter 120 was 10, this guy was a person who got off quite late.

Maybe this was the guy who saved Lee Sungkook in the first scenario.

“As a prophet who has read the Book of Revelation, I am glad and honoured to meet Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. However, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim... I’m sorry but can I ask you some questions?”

“Question? What is the question?”

“That, regarding Yoo Jonghyuk...”

“Do you doubt that I’m the real Yoo Jonghyuk?”

“...T-That’s not it.”

His face was red from my intense gaze.

“Try it.”

“Yes?”

“Ask me.”

The confused Jung Minseob nodded.

“Um... Then excuse me.”

In order to properly trick these guys, I had to keep a few things in mind.

“As far as I know, Yoo Jonghyuk took Delusional Demon Kim Namwoon as a companion in the third regression. Yet you have a strange woman with you instead of Kim Namwoon.”

“...”

“I thought she was Lee Jihye but she doesn’t seem to be in her teens. I also heard you calling her a different name.”

His memory and observation skills were quite good. Like Jung Minseob said, this world had already changed from the third turn that I knew. Now I had to shift this changed world to ‘suit my taste’ as much as possible.

“If you are asking me why I don’t have the Delusional Demon with me, the answer is simple. In this turn, the Delusional Demon doesn’t exist.”

“...Huh?” D-Doesn’t exist? Perhaps... did he die?”

“Yes.”

Their faces were filled with confusion for a moment. Jung Minseob asked, “No, how... Who the hell killed Kim Namwoon?”

“The Delusion Demon Kim Namwoon...”

These prophets’ mouths were slowly dropping. Now I would drive in the last wedge.

“He died at the hands of a prophet like you.”

Chapter 50

Night of the Prophets (2)

“A prophet like us?”

“Yes. At first, I didn’t realize he was a prophet. Now it looks like he is. He knew the future like you.”

“...Then?”

“It seems like he knows a lot more than you do. He killed the Delusional Demon and gobbled up the hidden scenarios in the beginning. Thanks to that, my plan became twisted.”

“T-There is a guy like that...?”

Of course there was. The person was right in front of you.

“He even seems to be impersonating me. When I encountered him last time, he was on the verge of death but he is still likely to be active near Chungmuro.”

[The constellation ‘Secretive Plotter’ admires your impudence.]

“...Chungmuro? Don’t tell me?”

Jung Minseob was surprised and opened his smartphone, tapping the keyboard like Lee Sungkook. Maybe he was informing the other prophets.

Jung Minseob asked me a few more questions and I answered them briefly.

“It is like this! Ah... then the third regression changed... You really are Yoo Jonghyuk.”

Jung Minseob was deeply impressed.

“That’s why you got that girl instead of the Delusional Demon. She seems enough to replace Kim Namwoon. She overpowered me in one blow...”

The most important thing was their misunderstanding.

Jung Minseob thought for a while before saying, "But when listening to Yoo Jonghyuk's story, I seem to know who killed the Delusional Demon."

"...You know?"

"Yes. I said this before... let me tell you this in advance, not all prophets are on the same side."

I expected to hear this conversation. If there were 48 who knew the future, there would be some people who thought wrongly.

"There are those who call themselves the Twelve Apostles. They believe they are the only ones who have read the real revelation and that they can change this world."

12 people. It was an exact match to the number of people who read up to chapter 50 of Ways of Survival.

"Why are they different from you?"

"They... they have read more of the revelation than us."

I was right.

"Right now, there are 11 known apostles. I'm guessing that the prophet that Yoo Jonghyuk-nim met is the last unknown apostle."

As they were creative people, they adapted when thrown into the scenario. This was a convenient misunderstanding. No, wait a minute... a misunderstanding?

If I thought about it, one of the 12 people who read up to chapter 50 would be me.

"You don't have any good feelings towards the apostles?"

"To tell the truth... that's right. Unlike us, they are planning to use the Book of Revelation to conquer this world."

...Why was my conscience pricked?

“They are the ones who pursue their own interests and sincerity rather than stop the destruction of the world by helping Yoo Jonghyuk. They are like the 10 Evils.”

“10 Evils...”

“That’s why I would like to ask Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. Please lead us. Stop them.”

I see. This was their real purpose. To be honest, it was a bit surprising. I never thought they would need me because of infighting between the prophets. I thought for a moment before opening my mouth.

“Okay. I accept. I will form an alliance.”

“R-Really?”

“However, I have one condition.”

Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob’s faces were tense as they waited for the conditions.

“First, give me Changsin Station.”

“Huh? Changsin Station...”

“It is the station right above Dongmyo. Haven’t you eaten it already?”

“Ah, then Chungmuro’s target station...”

Jung Minseob seemed to know something. In fact, this was the most major part of this alliance.

In Struggle for the Flag, the target that I must occupy was Changsin Station. If I couldn’t take it, I wouldn’t be able to finish the fourth scenario even if I walked the King’s Road to the end. If I didn’t complete the fourth scenario, both me and my group would automatically die.

By the way, Lee Sungkook’s expression was strange.

“Excuse me, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. I’m really sorry... this is a bit difficult.”

“Why?”

“The owner of Changsin Station isn’t a member of our group.”

“It isn’t yours?”

It was strange. It was because Dongmyo Station was right before it.

Lee Sungkook said with a sigh, “The ‘Tyrant King’ has occupied it.”

The Tyrant King. My blood ran cold.

“...He has already become a king?”

One of Seoul’s Seven Kings, the Tyrant King. He was one of the few people who could be compared to Yoo Jonghyuk at this point.

Shouldn’t it take a few days until he blossomed as a king? The guy who started at Dobong Station had already come down this far? It didn’t make sense no matter how I thought about it.

Lee Sungkook received my gaze and looked down.

“Actually... some of the prophets made a few mistakes and his power suddenly rose. In the midst of killing some prophets, he took the station... at the time, Prophets had 53 members.”

Suddenly, their credibility declined sharply. When I thought about it, I didn’t know the beginning of the novel well without help. Why did I think these people would do well?

“D-Don’t worry too much about it. We are preparing a powerful weapon to eliminate the Tyrant King. It isn’t just the Tyrant King. It is a weapon to deal with the Twelve Apostles.”

Jung Minseob agreed.

“Maybe Yoo Jonghyuk-nim doesn’t know it well. We worked very hard to figure out the revelations...”

No, I knew. These guys shouldn’t be alone. I had to end it before these people could ruin the story.

“Ah, this is good. Sooner or later, you will have a chance to see the weapon.”

“A chance to see the weapon?”

“Tomorrow, with the exception of the Twelve Apostles, the Night of the Prophets will be held. I-If you don’t mind...”

Jung Minseob’s eager eyes turned to me.

“Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, I want you to come with us.”



After the talk, Jung Heewon, Lee Hyunsung and I gathered in the accommodations provided by Lee Sungkook. I looked at the flag of Chungmuro Station.

Throughout the afternoon, my flag was changed to ‘navy’ due to the transfer of Dongdaemun Station and Cheonggu Station.

[You have used the benefits of the navy flag.]

[From now on, you can use the ‘group chat’ with the group members.]

From now on, we didn’t have to worry about conversations. The group chat couldn’t be intercepted unless another group member was in the same area.

I briefly explained to them about what happened today. Jung Heewon vaguely noticed but Lee Hyunsung was surprised.

–Oh my god, it is unbelievable. They know part of the future... that’s why Dokja-ssi is acting as Yoo Jonghyuk?

–Yes.

–Sigh... Then we should stay here for the moment. We need to find out more information about them...

–Nope.

–Huh?

–Today I will take care of them.

I looked at Jung Heewon and said.

–I’m sorry Jung Heewon-ssi.

–Its okay... I am just a bit hurt.

–.....

–I’m just joking. Isn’t Dokja-ssi playing a gangster right now? If you are sorry, let me deal with that jerk from before.

Jung Heewon smiled and continued.

–Then tonight will be a hot night?

–H-Hot...?

Lee Hyunsung was freaked out by Jung Heewon’s joke. I shook my head.

–I have something to do first.

–Something to do?

–Now all of them are moving. It will be difficult.

I took out a small cloak as I finished speaking. My figure suddenly disappeared and Lee Hyunsung spoke with confusion.

–Eh? Dokja-ssi?

–I will give you a signal. Then you will move.

It was a gold member’s privilege item, ‘Recluse’s Cloak’ which was purchased for 3,000 coins.

It was a five time consumable item but it could maintain ‘absolute stealth’ for 20 minutes once the ability was activated.

I melted into the darkness. It was useless against opponents with Absolute Senses Lv. 6 or higher but no one had such skills here.

I passed by the drowsy guards and arrived at Han Donghoon's tent. There was Sound Wave Blocking around the tent so I wasn't worried about anyone overhearing once I entered.

He carefully opened the tent and saw a boy sitting at the keyboard alone. The dark circles were thicker than they were in the daytime.

A solitary boy commenting alone. The Prophets had turned this boy into a worn-out machine. A propaganda machine that manipulated the future by scattering information that mixed fiction with truth. It didn't have much effect right now but the value of this boy would grow over time.

I quietly approached from behind and blocked his mouth. Han Donghoon gasped and struggled, but it was impossible to resist me with a level 10 strength.

I put my hand in my pocket and pulled out the Mental Awakening medicine that I bought along with the Recluse's Cloak. It was a huge 3,000 coins.

It would be a lie if I said it wasn't regrettable, but if I could get the Hermit King of Shadows with 3,000 coins, it would be a profitable transaction.

Some time after being fed the stimulant, Han Donghoon's eyes changed. The Hypnosis effect was loosened and the boy's sense of reason started to return.

"U-Uhh, you..."

Hypnosis didn't mean that he forgot everything. In this little boy's head, all types of trauma would be running through them. Once the Hypnosis slipped, his sponsor would start to intervene to some extent.

[The sponsor behind character 'Han Donghoon' has revealed himself.]

[The constellation 'Shadow behind the Curtain' has thanked you.]

[500 coins have been sponsored.]

Han Donghoon stepped back while holding the flag in his hand. I watched the flag closely and deliberately stepped away.

“Don’t worry. I’m not here to snatch the flag.”

“Uh-Uwah, ah...”

“You’re smart so you should understand right away. If I wanted to harm you, I wouldn’t have released Hypnosis.”

“T-T-Then.”

“I want to be friends.”

Han Donghoon’s eyes shook. I waited for a moment. It was until the turbulence in his head calmed down. But Han Donghoon wasn’t able to speak easily. That reminded me, this guy had a problem.

“Is it hard to speak directly? If you don’t mind, I’d like to talk through this.”

Han Donghoon looked at the smartphone held in his hands and started muttering something.

[The character ‘Han Donghoon’ used ‘Wide-area Internet Lv. 5’ on your smartphone.]
[You can use the Internet anywhere in ‘Seoul Dome’ unless the consciousness of ‘Han Donghoon’ is interrupted.]

After a while, Han Donghoon’s name appeared in the smartphone messenger.

–Who are you?

–I’ve been looking for you.

–Lee Sungkook also said that.

–I suppose so.

–I...

The boy’s trembling fingers couldn’t produce any more sentences. I instinctively realized. It was impossible to persuade this boy right now.

For more than 10 days, the boy’s wounds had festered to the point where it couldn’t

be easily restored.

–I understand you. It is scary and confusing.

[The character 'Han Donghoon' is greatly disturbed.]

–Don't be ridiculous.

–I am different from those people.

–I can't believe you.

–Don't you hate the Prophets?

Han Donghoon's eyes shook. Deep rooted resentment filled the boy's eyes due to the hypnosis.

–If you allow me to, I can get rid of them.

–... Why? You are a prophet...

–They shouldn't exist. They are interfering with the 'epilogue.'

Han Donghoon stared at me with eyes that couldn't understand and tapped on his keyboard.

–To me... What do you want? You will just use my abilities anyway.

I looked up and slowly opened my mouth.

–No, it is just the opposite.

I stared into Han Donghoon's eyes as I spoke aloud.

"You don't have to do anything."

◇ ◇ ◇

"Now those jerks time is over. It will all end tomorrow."

“Sigh... when this is over, I will have a bottle of soju.”

“Yes. Did you see that bastard’s eyes before? The Sage’s Eyes glared at me and I almost had a heart attack.”

“Hahat, how did a guy who got off at the prologue know about the Sage’s Eyes?”

Cheerful voices. It was so exciting that I wanted to keep listening.

“Hey, the other prophets are still suspicious... how do I convince them? They’ve been nagging me to go to Chungmuro...”

“Give me your phone and I will speak to them. At any rate... huh?” Jung Minseob’s face stiffened as he fiddled with the keyboard. “Why is the Internet not working all of a sudden?”

“Is that brat sleeping again? Go check it out.”

Jung Minseob was about to leave the tent when his body hit something. The moment he stretched out a hand.

“W-What is this...?”

Chiiiiing!

“Aaaagh!”

Jung Minseob fell onto the ground with a scream. I took off the Recluse’s Cloak and held the Blade of Faith.

“Y-Yoo Jonghyuk? How come?”

The confused Lee Sungkook stumbled while Jung Heewon poked her head in from outside the tent.

“I took care of some of them. But there are too many people... I won’t last long.”

Jung Heewon disappeared and the sound of fighting was heard from outside. Now the guards will flock.

“D-Don’t you know what will happen if you do this? Yoo Jonghyuk, you won’t be able to deal with all of us!”

“All? I don’t have to deal with everyone. I just need to handle you.”

This remark made Lee Sungkook’s lips twitch.

“I’m sorry Yoo Jonghyuk but I can’t let—”

Kudududuk!

I lightly swept the ether blade towards the fallen Jung Minseob and cut the armour he was wearing. Jung Minseob screamed.

“Aack!”

His flesh was torn and a piece of cloth fell out. I picked up the piece of cloth that had fallen out.

[You have won the flag of the ‘Dongmyo Group.’]

[Your navy flag has absorbed the cumulative achievements of the navy flag.]

[Your navy flag has evolved into a brown flag.]

[A strong flag protects you.]

“You are the real representative of Dongmyo.”

“H-How...?”

“No matter how stupid you guys are, you wouldn’t show the flag so proudly.”

In the first place, it was strange for them to give the representative position to Han Donghoon. They knew the future and wouldn’t give the representative position to a character in the novel.

However, Lee Sungkook wasn’t the representative. There was only one answer.

[The remaining members of the Dongmyo Group are waiting for your decision.]

Now the guards were meaningless. The hopeless Jung Minseob stuttered. “Y-Yoo Jonghyuk! The other prophets will know this...”

“How will you let them know when the Internet doesn’t work?”

Lee Sungkook cried out as he realized that all their plans were broken.

“Why... why are you doing this to us?”

“Let’s see.? This question is meaningless. Even if I was the ‘real Yoo Jonghyuk’, I wouldn’t form an alliance with guys like you.”

“W-What... don’t tell me...?”

I grinned at the pale-looking duo and laughed.

“You should’ve read to the end.”

Chapter 51

Night of the Prophets (3)

I was in a deep sleep. It was a long-awaited good night's sleep.

[The effect of the deep sleep has completely restored mental power.]

[Some of your exclusive skills have been updated.]

I checked my clock and saw that it was already 4 p.m.

Once Dongmyo Station and the surroundings areas were occupied last night, the accumulated fatigue settled firmly on me.

[Currently Occupied: Chungmuro (Main Base), Myeongdong, Dongdaemun History and Culture Park, Dongdaemun, Dongmyo, Sindang Station, Cheonggu Station, Yaksu Station, Sinseol-dong Station]

Thanks to eating the Dongmyo Group, I now had nine stations. Now I just needed one more and the King's Road scenario would be over.

Just a bit more and I could achieve one of the key goals of the beginning scenarios, King of No Killing.

Once I came out, Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung were waiting for me.

"We are ready. When will we go?"

"Please wait a moment."

I looked towards the men who were heading towards me.

"Did you sleep well?"

Last night, I decided to have all members of Dongmyo join my group. The two men in front of me was the result of that decision.

Jung Minseob bowed to me and opened his mouth.

“...Please keep me alive.”

“Me too, me too. Sob!”

Originally I planned to kill Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob, but I changed my mind. These two were useful until I completely wiped out the prophets.

I put them in the Chungmuro Group and evolved the colour of the flag to ‘brown.’

From the brown flag, it became possible to restrict the actions of the group members.

[You have exercised the right of the representative.]

[Group members Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob have restrictions on their behaviour.]

Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob’s expression changed at the emerging system messages.

“One, from now on, you can’t tell others about my identity.”

“Yes, yep!”

“Two, you must unconditionally submit to my commands and you aren’t allowed to act individually without my permission.”

“...Of course.”

[Group members Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob are willing to accept their limitations.]

[This restriction is a ‘life’ restriction.]

[If they break the restrictions, group members Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob will die.]

I nodded and said.

“Well... okay. I don’t know when my heart will change, but everyone work hard. I will decide while watching you.”

The two of them gulped and made hilarious faces. I didn't know what they were thinking. In any case, they wouldn't have been able to stick to Yoo Jonghyuk so it was better to stick to me.

"By the way, Representative-nim. What should we call you in the future...?"

"Call me like you are now. But call me Yoo Jonghyuk in front of the other prophets. Ah, Jung Minseob."

"Yep."

"Give me the Fugitive's Mask."

Jung Minseob was upset but eventually gave it to me. Anyway, I had to pretend to be Yoo Jonghyuk if I wanted to go to the Night of the Prophets. This 'mask' would be a preventive measure for a situation I didn't know.

After a moment, the muscles on my face moved in a bizarre manner as my appearance started changing. It felt a bit weird but I soon got used to it.

"Huh, this is the real appearance of Yoo Jonghyuk."

"Very handsome... The revelation wasn't wrong."

These bastards...

I wanted to snap out but I closed my mouth. I didn't need to be angry over something like this.

That reminded me, it would be better to know the details of these guys just in case.

"Jung Minseob, what is your attribute..."

At this moment, a system message flashed in my head.

[The history of this person has been updated.]

...What?

I tried to use Character List once again as a test.

[Character Information]

Name: Jung Minseob

Age: 25 years old.

Constellation Support: Cursed Gladiator

Private Attribute: Light Projection (Rare), 1089th Person to Get Off (General)

Exclusive Skills: Sword Training Lv. 2, Powerful Blow Lv. 2, Berserk Lv. 3, Memory Enhancement Lv. 5]...

Stigma: Repay Grudges Lv. 1

Overall Stats: Physique Lv. 18, Strength Lv. 16, Agility Lv. 12, Magic Power Lv. 10.

Overall Evaluation: An incarnation that possesses good comprehensive skills and attributes. His sponsor is a bit lacking but his ability as a warrior is considerable. He would've been one of the 12 apostles if he had been a bit more patient. He is very regretful.

...What did it mean that the Character List was updated?

A person I wasn't able to see the attributes window of yesterday suddenly became a character.

He was a prophet. In other words, a character outside the novel. Why did he suddenly change into a character?

"Oh, my attribute is..."

"No need."

"Yes."

I also confirmed the attributes of Lee Sungkook.

Fortunately, his attributes were the same. Hypnotist and 9th Person to Get Off... The latter was garbage but the former was a pretty good attribute.

"Give me your smartphone."

"Yep! Here it is."

I received a smartphone from one of them and connected to the chat room.

Ah... the Internet didn't work. Yesterday it was disconnected...

[The character 'Han Donghoon' used 'Wide-area Internet Lv. 5' on your smartphone.]
[The device's Internet is now available.]

As soon as I thought it, the Internet was connected. I glanced towards the tent where Han Donghoon was located. There was a vibration from the smartphone, indicating that a message had arrived.

–I'm going to believe in you just once.

Maybe something changed with Han Donghoon after what happened last night. I had been really worried about it so I was glad.

I sent a reply to Han Donghoon.

–Thank you.

Sooner or later, I would have a chance to talk to him. I once again opened Lee Sungkook's smartphone to the Prophets chat room.

[Chat Room]

[List of participants: No. 9, 15 I feel like Dying, 124 Let's Drop Off, No. 763, 887 Get Off, No. 645... a total of 36 people.]

I looked at the numbers in their names and got a sense of who they were. But something was strange.

"...36 people?"

Jung Minseob answered my question.

"All the prophets in the room stopped reading early. There are no apostles."

I see.

"By the way, Representative-nim. Didn't you say it yesterday? 'You should've read to the end'...then do you know all of the Book of Revelation?"

I looked at the expectant Jung Minseob and laughed.

I knew. Do you know?

“You won’t regret taking my line instead of Yoo Jonghyuk’s.”

After a while, we headed to Anguk Station while avoiding the surrounding conflict areas.

It was because the Night of the Prophets was scheduled to be held.

I spied on these guys through Lee Sungkook’s smartphone.

—

No. 519: *Really? Yoo Jonghyuk is coming this evening?*

No. 67: *There is no doubt. No. 9 and No. 1089 said it yesterday.*

887 Get Off: *The 9th is a newcomer but I can believe it if it is the 1089th...*

124 Let’s Drop Off: *This time they will all be behind us.*

887 Get Off: *No. 124, you are in Seoul ⇝⇝ How can those jerks fall behind you?*

124 Let’s Drop Off: *Ah, except for me of course. Local residents, victory ^ ^ v*

887 Get Off: *I would like to be a regressor... If I had read the novel at that time... No, if I had only read up to 50... I’m jealous of those apostles scum...*

15 I feel like Dying: *But don’t you think the people who read over 50 chapters are abnormal?? I don’t know how they read to over 50. ⇝⇝⇝*

124 Let’s Drop Off: *Real psychos ⇝⇝⇝⇝*

—

As expected, humans who hid behind anonymity would reveal the truth. Perhaps the number before the nickname was where they stopped reading.

—

No. 888: *But are you sure there is no txt version of this novel?*

No. 124: *A few days ago, I searched the Internet and there was really nothing left... Ahh...
A novel without a txt... (tears)*

No. 763: *Even if you had a copy, you wouldn't share such a fraudulent thing. If I could really sell my soul, I would buy it.*

--

The idea of trying to read Ways of Survival popped up. These guys, they should've read it with me at that time. Now they didn't know the days ahead.

We've arrived."

I was about to say, "What, already?" when I saw the platform of Anguk Station in front of me. The prophets who arrived in advance could also be seen.

But something was strange.

"Nobody has occupied this place?"

"Yes, it is a promise between the prophets. It could be dangerous to meet at an occupied station. It is sort of like the DMZ."

Then a prophet approached and waved.

"Hey, No. 1089!"

"Oh, it is No. 763 hyung."

Jung Minseob waved and welcomed the person.

"How have you been? Your face doesn't look good?"

"Well spotted. The Tyrant Kill is giving me hell."

"I told you not to advance towards the Dobong side. Why didn't you listen..."

No. 763 glanced towards me and his face suddenly stiffened.

“P-Perhaps... he is...?”

Jung Minseob nodded.

No. 763's eyes showed astonishment.

“I-It is really an honour. Yoo Jonghyuk-nim!”

The uproar caused the scattered prophets to gather one by one.

“Is that...?”

The prophets ran together and pushed in front of me. There were also a few female prophets.

“He looks better than I imagined! I am No. 998!”

“It is great to meet you, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim! I'm No. 1055!”

This... I felt like a real king. Their shining eyes wanted to win my favour somehow. I wondered what they would all look like when they realized I wasn't really Yoo Jonghyuk.

Most of them weren't worth paying attention to. Their knowledge of the future was dim and their abilities were poor.

Yet there were some prominent people.

“It was very impressive when you fought against Demon King Asmodeus in the second regression.”

Hoh?

“It was mentioned briefly in the Book of Revelations... now that I've met Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, I feel like hearing about it from you.”

Ways of Survival started with Yoo Jonghyuk's 'third' regression and all the stories from the second regression were treated as recollections.

Yet this guy knew about Asmodeus? Why was he so impressed when he didn't read

until the end?

“Who are you?”

“I am No. 1168.”

Then he almost read to the 50th chapter. Perhaps he was the one who read the most out of those present.

No. 1168 asked me, “Excuse me, is it Yoo Jonghyuk-nim’s third turn right now?”

“That’s right.”

“Ah, as expected...”

Some prophets had dark expressions.

Yes, I knew.

Ways of Survival was an infinite loop so those who discovered that it was early on in Yoo Jonghyuk’s regressions would be quite disappointed.

These jerks, they only got the cute side of Yoo Jonghyuk in the beginning... in any case, those who didn’t read until the end weren’t satisfied.

Then there was a disturbance behind me.

“Lee Hyunsung-nim!”

“Steel Sword Lee Hyunsung?”

Lee Hyunsung blushed as he was surrounded by people.

“W-What are you doing? I’m not the Steel... I’m not that!”

“Wow, just like a real revelation. Look at those biceps!”

“Ohhh! So taut!”

Lee Hyunsung had a good-looking face and was quite popular among the female

prophets. At that time, one passing prophet showed interest in Jung Heewon.

“Excuse, perhaps... are you Maritime Admiral Lee Jihye?”

“No.”

“Then are you...”

“I am Jung Heewon. Why?”

“Ah, I see.”

The disappointed prophet moved past Jung Heewon towards Lee Hyunsung. Jung Heewon looked at the situation and spoke to me in Group Chat.

–Why... isn't anyone interested in me?

–Heewon-ssi isn't famous in the future.

–Che.

–So do well from now on.

I turned away from the miserable Jung Heewon. I came to the Night of the Prophets for a reason. I couldn't waste time talking like this.

“Where is the weapon?”

“Huh?”

“The weapon you have hidden. I will check it first.”

“Ah, here it is.”

The 763th prophet excitedly moved to the centre of the platform and removed the cloth covering something. There was a big stone present.

I remembered the moment I saw the meteor shower on the roof of the theatre. No, wait a minute.

“Is that a meteorite?”

“Haha, that’s right. At this point, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim might not know... according to the Book of Revelation, it contained a powerful weapon.”

“A weapon?”

“Yes! That’s correct. Maybe it is a weapon like a top ranking star relic.”

“Doesn’t the meteorite need hatching time and can’t be used now?”

“Haha, we have a rotation that will provide magic power. It will hatch tonight at the latest. We have been working on it for a few days...”

I became colder as I looked at this proud bastard.

A red pattern. It was nonsense. This thing shouldn’t be known until at least the fourth regression?

“Which bastard gave you the information?”

“Huh?”

“That person who brought the meteorite to you.”

“Oh, that... No. 1124, he was the first one...”

No. 1124? A person who stopped reading early on knew this information?

“Where is he?”

Jung Minseob looked around the place and muttered.

“Uh... I guess he hasn’t come yet.”

The informant didn’t come. I thought for a moment before opening my mouth.

“We have to get out of here.”

It was a trap.

“Huh?”

“Right now.”

This was the first time I got a cold sweat since Ways of Survival became a reality and since meeting Yoo Jonghyuk the first time.

This was a weapon? Who was stupid enough to think like this...

I glanced around at the prophets staring at me with naive eyes. Then the platform started vibrating.

Kukukung...!

I looked at the trembling ‘meteorite’ and stepped back. I had come here to sweep away the prophets, only to be the one swept away.

“W-What is this?”

Jung Minseob made a stupid noise.

Dammit. The fourth scenario hadn’t even ended and the ‘disaster’ of the fifth scenario was about to appear.

I shouted toward Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung.

“Run away!”

This was why I couldn’t trust those who didn’t read to the end. Due to these damn people who got off early, today became all wrong.

Chapter 52

Night of the Prophets (4)

A red aura appeared around the meteorite and glowing lights shot all over the platform.

“Ohh! Finally!”

A prophet screamed.

Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung quickly approached me.

“Run away? What...”

It was too late. The red aura spread across the platform and a faint veil surrounded the station. Now none of the prophets would be able to leave Anguk Station.

[The constellations protest against the excessive filtering.]

[Many constellations’ eyes are shining at the ‘omen.’]

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ is watching the situation with curious eyes.]

[The constellation ‘Secretive Plotter’ is expecting your brilliant strategy.]

The constellations were excited and sent me indirect messages.

The most dangerous situation in the world of Ways of Survival was one where the constellations were partying.

I asked the nervous Jung Minseob, “Was No. 1124 the one who suggested that you gather here today?”

“Huh? I don’t know. We all agreed together...”

I felt clogged up, like someone had fed me ten sweet potatoes. I couldn’t believe things had gone this far.

–Everybody move behind me.

I paid attention the meteorite while protecting them.

–Aren't we running away?

–We can't go. If you look behind, you can see a ward.

–Huh? What ward?

I didn't answer as I stared at the meteorite in the centre of the platform.

[Meteorite] was the main event in the fifth scenario. The danger sleeping inside the meteorite would differ depending on the colour, brightness, size and type. However, the meteorite I was looking at now was one that should never hatch.

They seemed confused because the meteorite that gave the star relic in the third regression was 'bright red'...

"I wonder what star relic will appear?"

"That..."

Some prophets hadn't noticed yet and touched the meteorite.

[An omen of the fifth main scenario has appeared.]

Then the message popped up.

"Eh? What is this?"

"Why suddenly the main scenario..."

The surface of the meteorite cracked and a red light poured out. The first thing the light touched was the prophet staring at the meteorite with wonder.

The body of the prophet who lost his head slowly fell to the ground like a broken doll.

"What is going on?!"

The prophets screamed and retreated, but they were already unable to escape the crisis.

I took the party with me as I retreated to the edge and observed the situation. I remembered seeing this type of meteorite in Ways of Survival but it was tricky to know what would come out.

Please, don't let it be that 'disaster.' The meteorite cracked and red lava poured out.

The surrounding platform burned and released a bad smell. Then the temperature of the air rose rapidly and breathing became painful.

The surrounding environment was changing. This... a lava zone? It meant...

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, 'Lesser Dragon Igneel' has appeared!]

"Fuck! What? The star relic...?"

Several confused prophets belatedly used skills. However, the meteorite stretched out a long tail and caught a few escaping prophets.

"Kuaaack!"

The body of the prophet that caught by the tail suddenly burned up. Some prophets used skills to attack the tail but their weapons started to melt.

"T-This monster..."

The meteorite was at most two metres in length, but the monster crawling out from the gap was over five metres long.

Jung Heewon asked.

–What the hell is this?

–It is a disaster.

–Disaster?

The remainder of the meteorite split apart and a dragon species entered this

dimension.

Kuoooooh!

A violent dragon that was just born. Despite being a deteriorated version of a hatchling, a dragon still reigned at the apex of all monsters.

A 6th grade monster could wipe out all the prophets here and this was a 5th grade fire dragon.

“Yoo Jonghyuk-nim!”

Some of the prophets called out to me and all attention was still focused this way.

I frowned. The incident was caused by them yet they wanted me to solve it?

“Get back to the edges.”

Like an obedient puppy, everyone moved to a corner of the platform. The guys who were quick were already running upstairs from the platform. But.

“Shit, there’s a ward!”

The lesser dragon was a ‘disaster.’ In a situation where a disaster appeared, the size of the despair was different. At least, this was the pattern I knew.

Among Yoo Jonghyuk’s numerous regressions, he had definitely faced this guy.

I looked at the party members.

–A hidden scenario will soon start.

–Hidden scenario?

–This is a guy who shouldn’t have come out in the fourth scenario. It has an unusual difficulty so there will soon be an intervention.

In order to respond to this disaster, various benefits were needed in the fifth scenario. For example, if the blue meteorite came out...

But now we had nothing. Yes, something had to be given to balance us.

[Some constellations are complaining about the unusual scenario difficulty.]

Indeed. The next moment, sparks flew in the air and a small child-like presence appearance.

It wasn't a low grade dokkaebi like Bihyung. He wore a tidy suit with two little horns on his head. He was an impressive guy with a small lump protruding from his side pocket.

I didn't know his name but I knew what he was. He was an intermediate dokkaebi.

[Hrmm. This is difficult. How did you guys get this 'root'? It was only installed recently...]

Once his voice rang out, the movements of the lesser dragon stopped. Indeed, it was possible for an intermediate dokkaebi to intervene in the scenario to this level.

[A disaster woke up in the fourth scenario?]

The emergence of an intermediate dokkaebi meant that the 'early scenarios' had almost come to an end.

As long as he took notice of this place, I would barely be able to see the contract benefits with Bihyung.

[Some constellations are poisonous so I can't spare you... it is also hard to downgrade the difficulty...]

His gaze focused on me.

"But this isn't right! We haven't cleared the fourth scenario!" One prophet shouted.

I could see the prophets around him quickly covering his mouth. There was nothing good about yelling at a dokkaebi right now.

[I have decided. I won't downgrade the difficulty.]

The prophets glared at the dokkaebi. There was only the sound of breathing. They had

read Ways of Survival so they would know.

The dokkaebi couldn't overturn the laws. But they also knew this.

[Still... it won't be interesting if you all die this way. I will use my discretion to change the scenario content.]

The dokkaebi was more talkative than I thought.

[The hidden scenario has arrived!]

The lesser dragon started moving again. The red leather-covered paws hit the floor of the platform. I avoided the scattered debris and looked at the scenario that arrived.

+

[Hidden Scenario – United You Die, Scattered You Die]

Category: Hidden

Difficulty: A

Clear Conditions: Within the time limit, hunt down the 'lesser dragon Igneel' or survive his attacks.

Time Limit: 20 minutes.

Compensation: 3,000 coins

Failure: Death

Hidden pieces are hidden in this mission.

+

A 20 minute survival mission. From the title to the contents, it was ridiculous.

Lee Hyunsung asked.

–Do we have to hunt him?

–No, don't even dream about it.

This disaster is a disaster for a reason. Even the real Yoo Jonghyuk couldn't catch a 5th grade fire dragon. I looked at the situation on the platform. Flowing flames started pouring out.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa!

“Kuaaack!”

The prophets caught in the flames turned to ashes. The walls burned by the flames melted and distorted terribly. He was slowly moving to this side.

“Everyone run counterclockwise!”

I opened my mouth and ran ahead of the rotation direction.

Fortunately, Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung followed me well. Jung Minseob and Lee Sungkook were a bit behind but they still seemed okay.

This time, we avoided it because I knew the pattern. The problem was that this type of attack wouldn't always occur.

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, 'Lesser Dragon Igneel' is preparing the 'Flames of Destruction'.]

...It had started. We somehow avoided the general attack but the crisis came now.

“Look for a foothold.”

“Yes?”

“Number 5... or 2 and 3! Anyway, just quickly find something that adds up to 5!”

[A hidden piece is activated.]

[Numerical footholds are activated.]

[Once the appropriate number of people enters the foothold, 'Absolute Shield' can be activated in 10 seconds.]

[Absolute Shield won't activate when the number on the foothold is exceeded.]

The prophets all heard this system message. At the same time, footholds the size of two pyeong appeared all over the station.

“Footholds? Ah, right!”

“There is a hidden piece!”

I looked at the moving prophets and bit my lips. The giggling constellations reflected

in my eyes. Why did many constellations protest against the difficulty of the scenario?

It was simple. There was no fun in a story with 'only death.' They didn't want ants being trampled by a giant. These guys wanted the ants to fight back to survive. In order to live, the ants would even bit at their kin.

[Many constellations are watching the situation with excited eyes.]

Damn constellation scum.

"Shit, go!"

"Kuheek!"

The prophets, who had called each other's numbers in a friendly manner, now wielded their weapons against each other to fight over the footholds with the number '1.' Some prophets collapsed bleeding as they approached a foothold.

The swift prophets were already stepping on the footholds, strengthening their alertness.

I kept an eye on them. Someone had clearly planned this trap. Maybe they were the apostles.

They knew the prophets would gather her and decided to use this opportunity to wipe out those who stopped reading early.

It was a good idea. No matter how trivial the information, the fewer who knew the future, the better.

Usually, the apostles would be laughing at the prophets from far away. If they were 'ordinary' people.

Those who read more than 50 chapters of a boring novel weren't normal. They called themselves apostles and were greedy enough to control information.

'If they were intelligent enough to use the red meteor as a trap, wouldn't they know how to overcome the disaster?

If I was like this...

–Representative-nim! There is no foothold.

–There is nothing here!

Jung Heewon and Jung Minseob cried out urgently. There were no footholds in the place where our party was located.

–Oh, there is one here! But...

The foothold that was barely found had an ominous number. Four. In other words, only four people could survive on that foothold. But our party had five people.

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, ‘Lesser Dragon Igneel’ is using the ‘Flames of Destruction’.]

A huge spark started from the centre of the platform and started to spread throughout the station.

It was a lesser dragon’s full attack skill. The heat was enough to burn my skin despite being so far away. If the shield wasn’t activated now, my party would be destroyed.

“R-Representative-nim?”

Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob trembled as they met my gaze. I grasped the handle of Unbroken Faith.

At that moment.

“Yoo Jonghyuk-nim!”

I looked back and saw one prophet. The number ‘2’ was written on his foothold. Despite the urgent situation, this man still looked relaxed.

“Come this way!”

This guy...? A few memories passed by quickly. I ran towards him while shouting at the people behind him.

“Activate the shield!”

[Absolute Shield is activated!]

Kuoooooh!

Then the flames burned everything on the platform. If it had touched me just a little bit then I would've melted.

"Sigh... I'm glad."

The man who triggered the shield at breathtaking timing sighed with relief. I asked him, "Who are you?"

The man laughed lightly. "I'm disappointed. Have you already forgotten? I am No. 1168. About Asmodeus..."

I remembered. He was the one who spoke to me about Demon King Asmodeus.

"That isn't my question."

The eyes of No. 1168 shook.

I hadn't thought about it before.

The scene of the confrontation between Demon King Asmodeus and Yoo Jonghyuk. To be precise, the second regression Yoo Jonghyuk was one-sidedly beaten by the demon king.

It was a scene I remembered because I really liked it. However... this recollection didn't appear before chapter 50. I could say it with certainty as the full reader of Ways of Survival.

I pulled out my blade and opened my mouth.

"I will ask you again. Who are you?"

[Due to the effect of your exclusive attribute, the memory effect of some scenes have increased.]

The story of Demon King Asmodeus appeared exactly in chapter 57 of Ways of Survival.

A crack started to spread in this man's relaxed expression.

Chapter 53

Night of the Prophets (5)

The self-styled No. 1168 looked at the flames beyond the shield and asked,

“My identity? What are you talking about suddenly...?”

“Have you forgotten? I have Sage’s Eyes.”

In fact, this guy’s information wasn’t available to me.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[The information of this person can’t be read in ‘Character List.’]

[This person isn’t registered in ‘Character List.’]

What was the difference between an updated person and a non-updated person? I still didn’t know the exact reason why.

But whatever the reason was, deceiving this person wasn’t difficult. It was because he believed I was Yoo Jonghyuk.

“...I didn’t think Yoo Jonghyuk-nim would notice.”

“You are an apostle. Right?”

“That’s right. You already knew it.”

The fact that he said it so easily meant there were ulterior motives.

“This is a trap. Is it because of the Butterfly Effect?”

“Haha, that’s right.”

I wondered if my words were funny as No. 1168 smiled and looked at the other people around.

“If there are a lot of flying butterflies, unnecessary storms will happy.”

The prophets who couldn't find a foothold were melting like moths in the midst of the flames. The terrible screams and the information they knew disappeared into dust. It was the price they paid for trying to obtain a star relic without the proper information.

“You are killing the larvae before they become butterflies.”

“The larvae that are about to become pupa are the easiest to kill.”

The fierce heat died down and the chemical reactions in the surrounding area were subsiding. The Absolute Shield was soon turned off.

[After one minute, the positions of the footholds will be recreated.]

The hidden scenario would end when footholds appeared 10 times and they survived the attacks. We had just passed one so there were nine left.

I tried pressing against the shield with my feet. The heat was high but it was enough to endure.

–Representative-nim!

I waved my hand to stop those running from afar.

Now wasn't the time to take care of them.

–The attack patterns are familiar so please learn them and avoid them on your own. I can't take care of you right now.

The party members noticed something strange and stopped moving.

In a situation where the power of the apostles wasn't clear, it was dangerous to drag them with me.

No. 1168 looked at me and said, “This isn't like what I saw in the Book of Revelations. Is this really your third regression?”

“Shut up. Where did you get off?”

“Hrmm? You would know if you checked it yourself.”

“I like a person who is the same on the outside. I can’t make a deal with a person who has two different sides.”

The apostles’ eyes widened. “How interesting.”

“There must be a reason why you would so easily identify yourself.”

The tail of the lesser dragon flew through the air and struck the spot where we were. It was easy for me to avoid it with my over level 30 agility. However, No. 1168’s astute movements were amazing.

I triggered Calm Observation that I got from Theatre Dungeon. It was a skill I saved for those who Character List didn’t work on.

His perspiration, speed, breathing interval... The sum of his physical body stats was around 49~50. It was a significant level among the prophets I had seen.

I moved behind him and he opened his mouth. “I’ll formally greet you. I’m No. 1195. Among the apostles, I am the 5th Apostle.”

The number of views for Ways of Survival’s first chapter was 1,200. If he was 1,195, he was among the top five of the latest people to stop reading. Then he knew about the ‘red meteorite.’

“What is your purpose? “Do you also need my help?”

“Huhu. To save Yoo Jonghyuk-nim... what would you say to that?”

“It is more plausible than the lie about mosquitos becoming butterflies.

“Indeed, you have Lie Detection.”

He licked his dry lips. Should I do it now?

...No. A little bit more. Just listen a bit more.

“However, I’m not lying about my desire to save Yoo Jonghyuk-nim. Things would be difficult if you die here. The revelations will be greatly ruined.”

“You knew I was coming.”

“We discovered it a few hours ago. Therefore, we hurriedly revised the plan.”

There were sparks and a few more prophets near us died. There were still those who were hanging on. It was like they knew the patterns of the lesser dragon. I kept an eye on those people.

“Originally, we had no plans to participate. If only you Yoo Jonghyuk-nim wasn’t here.”

“So?”

“Don’t you already know the answer?”

[The positions of the footholds will be created!]

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, ‘Lesser Dragon Igneel’ is preparing the ‘Flames of Destruction’.]

My party members successful found footholds this time. The apostle and I also found a foothold that fit two people.

To be precise, the apostle tossed the person already occupying it out with force. The drops of blood landed on the brutal apostle. He wiped it off and said, “We have to slay the lesser dragon.”

Ku ku ku ku!

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, ‘Lesser Dragon Igneel’ is using the ‘Flames of Destruction’.]

The Absolute Shield activated and once again blocked the flames.

Kuoooooh!

Only two stages had occurred but there were less than a quarter prophets remaining. The party members had been keeping pace but it was uncertain how long they would last.

[A hidden piece penalty has occurred.]

[The number of footholds created in the next turn will be reduced.]

I spoke with narrowed eyes, “With your power alone?”

“It is possible. I have prepared enough.”

I felt uneasy as I heard his confident voice. That reminded me, he was shedding a single drop of sweat in this heat. A bluish chill spread over his skin.

This was... I see. Their preparations were outstanding.

“It is the ice pill.”

“That’s right.”

A pill that had a certain probability of appearing when a 7th grade elemental species was hunted in the Gangseo-gu area stations. They already managed to get their hands on this pill. It would release a powerful ice attribute for at least 30 minutes.

In other words, they had a foundation to hurt the lesser dragon. The problem was the attack power.

“It is impossible with you alone.”

“Who said I was alone?”

I looked at the survivors. There were a few people I was particularly keeping an eye on. I looked closer and saw that their bodies were covered with a bluish chill.

“Huhu, how can I come here alone?”

I counted and there were five of them. They had committed half their power for this operation. The five apostles must have confidence after eating the five ice pills.

But.

“A few more people won’t make a big difference.”

“That’s why I am seeking help. I will give an ice pill to Yoo Jonghyuk-nim if you decide to help us.”

“If I refuse?”

“All of Yoo Jonghyuk-nim’s party members here will die.”

“Do you think you will be safe like that?”

“Even if we can’t take care of the lesser dragon, we can at least take care of our bodies.”

He was brimming with confidence. They would’ve already lost their heads if I was the real Yoo Jonghyuk.

“Do you think I am worried about my party members? People die anyway. I can gather other people.”

I raised Unbroken Faith to his neck. Then he shook his head.

“Huhu, you are truly like the revelations. But you better think carefully.”

“What do you mean?”

“By now, Yoo Jonghyuk-nim’s main base would’ve entered our hands.”

“...What?”

“Maritime Admiral Lee Jihye, a child who uses strange abilities. And one of the 10 Evils. It is different from the original revelation but you have made a fairly good party. If they all die, won’t Yoo Jonghyuk-nim face problems starting again?”

They had already investigated up to here. These bastards...

“Won’t it be worse if we take away Chungmuro Station? Right now, it is just a proposal. But don’t think this proposal will last forever. Our group has already completed the King’s Road scenario by taking over 10 stations. You should know the gap between a group with a ‘king’ and a group without a king.”

“...”

“Perhaps the situation would already be over by now. The king will be waiting for Yoo Jonghyuk-nim’s choice in front of Chungmuro’s flag holder.”

...I see.

I knew their plan. These guys, they planned to hit Chungmuro from the moment they received information I was coming to the Night of the Prophets.

“If you pledge to join us, we will promise the safety of your party as well as our full support in the future. This is a promise on the king’s honour.”

My heart was pounding from the precise threat. They were actually this bold against Yoo Jonghyuk. It was rare to find this in someone who read Ways of Survival.

“Who is your king? Where did they get off?”

“Hmm... the king dislikes being called someone who ‘got off.’”

“So what do you call them?”

“Even if you are Yoo Jonghyuk-nim, please refrain from speaking about him like that. He is the only one among the prophets who has read all the revelations. He knows both Yoo Jonghyuk’s past and future.”

...What? I was surprised for a moment but didn’t greatly panic. This was interesting. There was another reader who read all of the novel?

Laughter emerged. It was a ridiculing laugh. It was because there absolutely couldn’t be such a thing.

Kuoooooh!

Finally, the third attack of the fire dragon was about to begin. I looked at the apostle and quietly stepped out of the foothold.

The bewildered apostle asked as I walked forward. “Yoo Jonghyuk-nim? What are you doing?”

The party members far away were also surprised. I waved my hands.

–Don’t worry. No matter what happens, you absolutely can’t move from there. Understood?

I walked in the direction of the lesser dragon. It was with slow but sure steps. The fire dragon stared ferociously at me as it prepared the Flames of Destruction.

“What are you doing?! Come back!”

The apostle behind me hastily exclaimed. I turned around and smiled at him.

“Did the king tell you about this future?”

As I listened to him, I kept thinking. These guys shouldn’t be alive. But they had a ‘strategy’ and I couldn’t kill them all by myself. If so... I laughed and continued talking.

“You guys, have you forgotten what my stigma is?”

If I was them. What would they ‘fear’ the most right now?

“I’m not afraid of death. I can just start over again.”

The answer was simple. They believed I was Yoo Jonghyuk. If that was the case...

“I wonder. What will the effect be on you? You are unusual presences in this turn.” The most ‘fearful’ thing to them was what I feared most. “If I die here, will you exist in the next turn? Or will you end with this world?”

They didn’t want Yoo Jonghyuk to die.

“If you really read the revelations, you should know the answer right?”

The apostles’ faces paled. There were times when it was easier to handle those who used their heads.

“Yoo Jonghyuk!”

The five apostles moved from the footholds and started to run towards me. I knew it. No matter how unconcerned they pretended to be, they were people who ‘got off’ and were caught up in this scenario.

What would happen to them in a world where the protagonist was dead? They didn’t know.

“Catch him quickly!”

Just like me.

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, 'Lesser Dragon Igneel' is using the 'Flames of Destruction'.]

The moment that flames burst out from the centre of the platform, I exploded all the strength in my muscles and ran towards the legs of the dragon. Then I put my flag into the flag holder of Anguk Station located there.

[You have occupied Anguk Station.]

[Currently Occupied: Chungmuro (Main Base), Myeongdong, Dongdaemun History and Culture Park, Dongdaemun, Dongmyo, Sindang Station, Cheonggu Station, Yaksu Station, Sinseol-dong Station, Anguk Station]

[The achievement points of the brown flag are rising.]

[You have occupied 10 stations!]

[The hidden scenario – 'King's Road' has been achieved.]

[Depending on the path you walk, you will receive a new 'king' attribute].

1. King of Arrogance and Hypocrisy
2. King of Solitude and Taste
3. King of No Killing
4.

I replied without reading the rising options.

"King of No Killing."

[The new attribute, King of No Killing has been obtained!]

This was enough. I hadn't wanted to do this but it was necessary to get rid of the people here.

The apostles discovered the flames and hurried back to the footholds. However, it was already too late.

"You should've been careful. You only have one life."

The wave of flames covered them. It was an attack that couldn't be endured even if they ate the ice pill.

[The durability of the External Enhanced Suit has decreased dramatically.]

[The durability of the External Enhanced Suit has run out.]

My vision soon became dim. There was the feeling of flesh being burnt and I lost consciousness.

[You have died.]

.

.

A moment later, a system message was heard.

[The privilege of the King of No Killing is activated.]

Chapter 54

First Person Protagonist's Point of View (1)

One of the most painful deaths in the world was burning to death and I had just experienced it. The neurons in my brain seemed to emit light at once.

[The exclusive skill 'Fourth Wall' has attenuated the mental pain.]

The pain was slowly reduced. It was once again the Fourth Wall. I always felt strange when I escaped from trouble with the help of this skill.

Ways of Survival had become a reality and I was living in it. Then... what was this 'wall' that I felt every time?

.....

No, these thoughts were futile. I was safe thanks to the attribute 'King of No Killing' and had to move again.

It was an attribute that could be gained only when the conditions of King of No Killing was met. Unlike its name, the privilege of the attribute was more like 'immortality' than 'no death.' It was conditional but...

In any case, I would soon return to my flesh. At least that was what I thought.

[Due to a conflict error with your exclusive skill, the privilege of King of No Killing would be delayed.]

Huh? A skill conflict error?

[Thanks to your death, your consciousness has been completely liberated from the constraints of your body.]

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3 has been activated!]

I was overcome with a dizzy feeling. No, wait a minute. What was happening this time?

{Damn, if only it wasn't him.}

The dizziness flooded in and my vision brightened. Then I was watching a 'scene.'

{Gong Pildu licked his lips as he observed the people around the platform. Now he couldn't run away. He thought about it but he knew better than anyone that he didn't have the courage to do so.

"Um... Dokja hyung."

There was a weight pressing against his knee and Gong Pildu looked down. It was a boy around 10 years or so. There was a boy sleeping on his thigh.

"Why am I like this...?"

Gong Pildu wondered as he looked down at the sleepy Lee Gilyoung. His old memories surfaced. A young child. Lee Gilyoung was his daughter's age.

He shook his head and sighed.

–Pildu-ssi, we should stop now...

–Daddy. How long are you going to keep talking about land?

There was a time when he was the breadwinner of the family.

He earned money to feed his family and buy land. If he was lucky, he would become a landlord and then get tenants...

Finally, he became a 'big investor' in Chungmuro but it didn't take long to find out that he couldn't keep his small family.

"Isn't this surprisingly okay? You get along well with people."

He looked up to see a beauty with a nice face. Yoo Sangah. Two days ago, this woman had become the deputy of Chungmuro.

"Quickly stop talking nonsense."

"You were smiling just now..."

Gong Pildu made a look of distaste. Yoo Sangah sat down hesitantly next to Gong Pildu.

“Ahjusssi, how many times did you buy land?”

“What?”

“When I look at the people in the Landlord Alliance, only you are the one with the ‘Land Owner’ attribute.”

“...It isn’t good to have a lot of land. It needs to be good land. You are naive.”

“Then what is good land?”

“Expensive land is good land.”

“What type of land is expensive?”

“It is land that many people want.”

“Was your land like that?”

“Yes.”

It wasn’t land that he wanted.

Gong Pildu looked into Yoo Sangah’s eyes. This woman’s curiosity had an oddly sharp corner. She was smiling on the outside but he couldn’t help feeling uncomfortable.

Duduk. Duk. Duk.

Then a sound was heard in the distance. Yoo Sangah’s expression hardened while Lee Gilyoung woke up in a flash from where he was sleeping on Gong Pildu’s knees. The antennae of the cockroach on his back shook.

Ku ku ku ku!

Line 4, the tunnel from Hoehyeong. Something was coming this way. Yoo Sangah stood up while Gong Pildu used a skill.

[The character ‘Gong Pildu’ has activated ‘Armed Zone Lv. 8!]

Gong Pildu bit his lips. This might be an intuition only rich land owners got. There was something like that.

“Hey! Huddle up!”

It was the feeling of someone trying to take away his land.

Dududududu!

Gong Pildu turrets fired all at once into the darkness and something fell. They were ground rats.

“The enemy! Gather around Gong Pildu-ssi! We will go with the large-scale exercise we practiced in the morning!”

Yoo Sangah called out and the people scattered on the platform ran.

“Group A is near the turrets, group B will be at the centre of the gunfire and group C will be protecting Gong Pildu-ssi!”

The people moved in the orderly ranks that they had practiced in advance. The ground rats collapsed due to the people’s quick response. It was much easier than when Emergency Defense was taking place.

As the dozens of ground rats collapsed on the ground, the same thought entered the minds of the Chungmuro members. It was easy. It truly was worth everyone cooperating.

Then they heard a voice from the tunnel.

“As expected, Hamelin’s Flute isn’t enough?”

“How can the 9th grade species compare to a place eaten by Yoo Jonghyuk?”

A group of people appeared from the darkness. Four men and one woman.

Gong Pildu’s expression hardened. He didn’t know the reason. However, one thing was for certain. These guys were different from the ones they had dealt with so far.

“Dammit... quickly call the samurai girl!”

“I am already here.” There was a cold feeling as Lee Jihye came down from where she had been. “And don’t call me a samurai. If you don’t want to get beaten up.”

Despite the grumpy answer, Gong Pildu felt a bit calmer. Lee Jihye was a great power. Yet Gong Pildu still felt uneasy. He was anxious and growled like a frightened beast.

“Who are you? Where did you come from?”

“It is real. The Maritime Admiral and Armed Fortress Master has become a team.”

It wasn’t an answer that came back but words that were close to mocking.

Gong Pildu asked, “What nonsense are you saying? Quickly go back. Otherwise I will shoot to kill!”

However, the five men and women didn’t look at Gong Pildu. They just continued talking to each other.

“Who is on the dragon side?”

“Numbers 5, 6, 8 and 9. They aren’t apostles but they are pretty good.

“With the exception of the one outside Seoul, there are five of us left.”

“The five of us are enough. Quickly sweep them away.”

The first one who came forward was a man in his 30s with a bulging belly.

He was a man with the number ‘7’ on his shoulders. He had thick eyebrows and looked at Lee Jihye’s white legs like they were to his taste.

“I will take the Maritime Admiral. She isn’t a big deal without the sea.”

“What are you bastards saying?”

Lee Jihye cried out sharply and rushed forward. Gong Pildu realized it couldn’t be helped and infused magic power into the turrets.

“Damn, just go to hell!”

Dududududu!

The man with a '4' on his cloak laughed.

"As expected from one of the Ten Evils. If we came a bit later, we would've been swept away."

"Numbers 3 and 4. You two take Gong Pildu. Be vigilant and attack the turrets one by one."

The man with a '3' on his forehead nodded.

"Yes... I understand. One of the 10 Evils can be handled by both of us."

"Number 2, you handle the rest."

The woman with a '2' on her cheek frowned. She was holding a small flute in her hand.

"Why do I have to handle such petty reason?"

"It is the most appropriate for you."

"What are you going to do?"

Then the man with a '1' on the dark cloak opened his mouth.

"I will be taking the flag holder."}

The moment of immersion was broken and consciousness returned. Now it all made sense.

Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint. I had a similar experience the last time I was in the ichthyosaur's stomach. At that time, I saw Yoo Jonghyuk.

By the way, it was amazing. I thought I had prepared for the apostles but it wasn't enough. I was able to guess their thoroughness just from the items they brought.

There was Hamelin's Flute that could control the ground rats and the Magic Power Bullet Shield that could defend against Gong Pildu's attack.

They really wanted to capture Chungmuro, obtain Yoo Jonghyuk and devour this world.

But it wouldn't be so easy.

{“W-What? Was the Maritime Admiral this strong in the beginning? Hey, isn't something wrong?”

It was the 7th Apostle who cried out first.

Lee Jihye's sharp sword pushed the 7th Apostle back little by little. It was natural. The current Lee Jihye was much stronger than the Lee Jihye in the original 'third turn.'

“Damn, why are these two turrets so hard?”

Number 3 and 4 were in trouble.

The 2nd Apostle playing Hamelin's Flute was also struggling due to Yoo Sangah's Binding Thread and Lee Gilyoung's Mjolnir's Thunder.

In the end, it was the 1st Apostle who came forward. He frowned before pulling something out and lighting it. Then he threw it at the Chungmuro party.

Kwaaaaang—!}

There was a loud roar and Chungmuro's platform was covered with explosions. I was startled.

...This son of a bitch?

[Mass Destruction Magic Bullet]

It was hard to deal huge damage to top monsters but against humans, it was the most powerful weapon of mass destruction.

It was a weapon that could be made with some items that appeared in the Gangseo and Gangnam areas, as well as some items bought from the Dokkaebi Bag.

Then he was the 'king' of the apostles. The purple flag on his back proved it.

The dust settled down, revealing the Chungmuro platform. My chest was becoming stuffy. If the apostles had this then the situation was unfavourable.

The dust cleared and the fallen Chungmuro group members were seen. People were coughing up blood.

Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung were lying on their floor. Even Gong Pildu couldn't completely avoid getting injured despite using Protective Wall.

{“Phew, now it looks good. Right?”

The 7th Apostle grabbed Lee Jihye's head while her uniform was torn. She was in the front and received the biggest blow from the explosion.

“Aren't you just a supporting actor, huh?”

“Bastards... cough!” Lee Jihye screamed as she was punched in the stomach.

“Can I have this gurl?”

“What will you do with her? There is no time.”

“What will I do? Looking back, isn't she destined to follow the main character and be miserable? Then I would rather...”}

Lee Jihye's small body shook in the air like a rag doll. Her lips were trembling. She was staring at me.

{He... lp... me.}

Impulsive anger filled my head. It was unlike me. Lee Jihye was clearly just a 'character.'

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is activated!]

[Excessive immersion has restricted some of the features of Fourth Wall.]

I was too immersed. I became dizzy and nauseous.

[Excessive immersion leads to a profound increase in the proficiency of Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint.]

[Changing your viewpoint to first person.]

My consciousness narrowed and stretched like a rubber band. Then I opened my eyes. I was really in Chungmuro.

...How? Lee Jihye was looking at me with shaky eyes. It wasn't just her. At this moment, everyone on the platform was watching me.

My field of view moved slowly. I walked towards Lee Jihye. To be exact, my body was moving regardless of my will.

One step, another step. Slowly but steadily, I was closing the distance to her.

The 7th Apostle frowned and asked, "You are...?"

I was uncomfortable, like I was wearing clothes that didn't fit my body. The height of my gaze was different from usual as well as my five senses.

At this moment, I realized who 'I' was. I couldn't help laughing.

I disliked it. I really disliked it.

Lee Jihye's lips moved a little bit.

"Ah..."

My hand gripped the hilt of the sword like it was something I had done millions of times.

The grip of my fingers was strange. It was natural and beautiful. I was thrilled with the fantastic feeling that I felt for the first time in my life.

The blade moved silently. No one could see anything.

Just. It went through something. Something was cut off. Something fell to the ground.

Some people were shocked while other people's mouths dropped open.

The 7th Apostle holding onto Lee Jihye slowly sank down. Blood gushed from his neck. My hands moved and I caught the falling body of Lee Jihye.

“Ah, ah...”

I lightly placed Lee Jihye down on the platform. I raised my eyes and saw the apostles looking this way. The first one to speak was the 3rd Apostle.

“You... who are you?”

How funny. It was a stupid question. I slowly opened my mouth. It was like I was this guy from the start.

“I am Yoo Jonghyuk.”

The coldest and loneliest voice in the world. The sleeping prince had finally woken up from his deep sleep.

“And you shall die here.”

Now Chungmuro would be safe.

.

.

My consciousness escaped from Yoo Jonghyuk’s body and slowly returned to its original body.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 3 has been turned off.]

[The skill conflict error is normalized.]

[The delayed privilege of the King of No Killing has reappeared.]

[Your body is resurrected from death.]

Chapter 55

First Person Protagonist's Point of View (2)

[The recreation of your flesh has begun.]

Just like falling paint spread out, my vision slowly cleared. The surrounding contrast and saturation were unclear. By bones, capillaries, digestive and respiratory tract and my whole eyes regenerated. My senses were confused because they still hadn't found their place.

In any case, I could rest assured about Chungmuro.

No matter how strong the apostles were, they wouldn't be able to defeat Yoo Jonghyuk who was stronger than the original.

By the way... it was a truly unique experience. I shared a first person point of view with Yoo Jonghyuk. If possible, I didn't want to do it again.

[The exclusive skill 'Fourth Wall' offsets the mental shock caused by your death.]

[Compensation is being prepared for the Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3.]

...Usage compensation?

I could see Jung Heewon shouting from afar. Her face was astounded as Lee Hyunsung held onto her. Jung Minseob and Lee Sungkook were in shock when they looked over here.

Fortunately, they were all safe. I wasn't too late.

"Dokja-ssi!"

Jung Heewon forgot and cried out my name.

Kyaoooooh!

In fact, there was no need to hide it anymore. Air flowed into my newly created lungs.

There was still the merciless lesser dragon in the vicinity.

“As expected from Yoo Jonghyuk-nim!”

“Did he use a divine restoration pill?”

These cries came from the few prophets who had survived. Of course, I didn’t have a divine recovery.

Reviving from death was completely different to recovering from a serious wound.

[The benefits of the King of No Killing has been completed.]

[100 karma points have been consumed.]

[The wastes of your flesh have been completely removed and the performance of your body has increased.]

[Physique and magic power has increased by 1 each.]

There was even a resurrection bonus. This was why ‘King of No Killing’ was a scam. In all of Ways of Survival, Selena Kim of the United States was the only one who obtained this attribute.

[Current karma points: 0/100]

[Fill up the points for your next resurrection.]

[One karma point will be obtained every time you save someone’s life.]

The privilege of the King of No Killing was ‘resurrection.’ Of course, it wasn’t unconditionally resurrection. Karma points were necessary. It was fortunate that the first resurrection started with 100 points.

Kyaoooooh!

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, ‘Lesser Dragon Igneel’ is using the ‘Flames of Destruction’.]

I couldn’t die as soon as I revived. Since my points had fallen to 0, the resurrection privilege couldn’t be used for a while.

I looked around and saw the number ‘2’ written on a foothold. The other people were already standing on a foothold.

“Hyunsung-ssi, go over there! We’ll go to the next one!”

Lee Hyunsung rushed towards me at Jung Heewon’s quick judgement. Lee Hyunsung arrived and opened his mouth while sweating.

“Dokja-ssi, are you okay?”

“Just take a look.”

“...I thought my eyes were mistaken for a while.”

I didn’t have time to explain in detail how it was possible.

[Absolute Shield is activated!]

The Flames of Destruction burned in front of my eyes. I spoke to Lee Hyunsung, who was looking at me like I was Jesus.

“Hyunsung-ssi, do you have anything for me to wear? A poncho or...”

“I might be a soldier but... ah.”

Lee Hyunsung belatedly recognized the situation and looked at my body. The resurrection was good except for one thing. The external suit had melted and most of the items I picked up were destroyed.

In other words, I was now naked.

“...No, that’s okay.” I muttered.

Lee Hyunsung had raised his hand to his waist and now he returned it to his original position.

No matter how strong a person, this sense of sacrifice was too much. In any case, I didn’t need clothes but the items that fell.

Even the Flames of Destruction couldn’t dissolve star relics or scenario items. In fact, Unbroken Faith was rolling around the lesser dragon’s legs and the brown flag was also on the ground. It was a location where other people couldn’t easily pick them up.

As soon as the shield was lifted, people started to run from far away. The one who ran first was Jung Heewon.

“Dokja-ssi!”

Jung Heewon’s expression gradually stiffened as she ran towards me.

[The constellation ‘Abyssal Black Flame Dragon’ is looking at the black flame dragon.]

I felt her gaze covering my shoulders and back before she looked away.

“I didn’t see anything so don’t worry. Is now the time to care about that?”

I reflexively shrank back at the words. Then a poncho covered my body. Looking closer, it was a big one.

[Samyeongdang’s Straw Mat]

Jung Heewon handed it over to me.

“Thank you, Jung Heewon-ssi.”

I was very thankful to her right now.

[The constellation ‘Bald General of Justice’ is a little sad.]

“Let’s move.”

Kyaoooooh!

The lesser dragon Igneel’s physical movement stage had begun. We once again moved counterclockwise and avoided the attack.

Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung ran ahead of me. They seemed to care about the ‘black flame dragon’ dangling from my lower body. The straw mat was more uneven than I thought and didn’t cover the front.

Jung Minseob ran without noticing and asked, “What now representative? All the apostles have died...”

As Jung Minseob said, I didn't see any remaining apostles.

The proof was that their ice pills were rolling around the areas where they died. They were items with a long digestion time and didn't melt in the flames.

A dragon's paw flew through the air.

"Kyaaak!"

Two prophets running behind the party were crushed.

I ran to the centre of the platform and grabbed Unbroken Faith and the brown flag.

[You have recovered the brown flag.]

[You can use the flag's abilities.]

I looked around and it was only my party members remaining. As I was thinking, the time for the footholds to be activated had already come.

[Numerical footholds are activated.]

"Gather!"

Fortunately, a foothold with the number '5' was activated. The problem was that there was only one active foothold this time.

The intermediate dokkaebi's voice could be heard in the air.

[Huhu, you are still holding up well. But will that luck continue?]

Next time, the number on the foothold might be three or four. If so, someone in the party would surely die. If it was six...

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, 'Lesser Dragon Igneel' is using the 'Flames of Destruction'.]

[Absolute Shield is activated.]

We barely made it with 10 seconds to spare. I had to think of this as the last time.

"Phew... this bastard. Dokja-ssi, what do we do?"

Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon were exhausted. It was natural since they had ran dozens of times in an environment where it was hard to breathe.

“I think we should fight.”

“Can we catch it?”

“It isn’t impossible.”

I pointed to the ice pills rolling around on the floor. The number was exactly a match for the members of our party. If we ate the items that the apostles prepared, it wasn’t impossible to damage the lesser dragon. The question was if we could kill it before the next full attack began.

[Absolute Shield will be released.]

“Run! Pick up the pills that have dropped on the ground!”

The party members popped out as I yelled.

[4,100 coins have been invested in magic power.]

[Magic Power Lv. 16 -> Magic Power Lv. 25]

[Your soul is attuned to the world!]

In order to get rid of the lesser dragon as quickly as possible, I needed to raise my magic power instead of my strength.

I picked up an ice pill and swallowed it.

[The ice property has temporarily opened.]

[40% ice damage is added.]

Now the only thing left was to inflict damage. What should I do? There was a limit to charging recklessly.

Lee Hyunsung had Great Mountain Smash but he lacked agility. Jung Heewon had excellent agility but she lacked a powerful finishing blow.

It would be good if we attacked a weak spot. Was it something that Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint could point out? Ah, that reminded me...

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint is already in use.]

[The compensation for the exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3 is available.]

I used the reward.

[You have experienced the first person protagonist's point of view.]

[You can take one of the protagonist's skills.]

...What?

I was too puzzled to see the flying paw of the lesser dragon. Jung Heewon's body pushed against mine and the paw landed where I used to be.

Kwaang!

"Why are you freezing?"

Jung Heewon cried out but I couldn't easily answer. I could take one of the protagonist's skills. This meant I could get one of Yoo Jonghyuk's skills.

[Presenting the list of available skills.]

Oho, I got a choice?

Now that I had eaten the ice pill, what if I could get one of Yoo Jonghyuk's skills?

If I could obtain something like Strong Self-Defense or Breaking the Sky Sword...!

[Please select a skill to acquire.]

1. Cold Resistance
2. Fire Resistance
3. Lie Detection.

...Shit, it was like this.

Things couldn't be resolved so easily. I liked Lie Detection the most among the available skills, but it was useless for me right now.

The most useful thing for this situation was Fire Resistance...

Kuoooooh!

The lesser dragon roared and breathed out fire. Once this action was over, the Flames of Destruction phase would begin.

Let me think. I was a 'reader.' There would be an answer in what I had read.

[Due to the effect of your exclusive attribute, the memories from the books you have read will increase.]

The pages flashed in my head. The lesser dragon's attacks. There was some information in the 12th, 14th and 17th regressions. Now these things were given to me.

"Dokja-ssi, quickly...!"

I slowly closed my eyes.

Then.

"Cold Resistance."

I decided.

[The skill Cold Resistance is now available to be used.]

I turned to the others and shouted.

"Jung Heewon-ssi, Lee Hyunsung-ssi! Have you eaten your ice pills yet? Give all of them to me."

"Huh?"

"Lee Sungkook, Jung Minseob! You too!"

Jung Minseob's eyes widened just as he was about to put the ice pill in his mouth.

"Quickly!"

"Ah, yes!"

I quickly received the four ice pills. I avoided the flames and poured all of the pills into my mouth. I was certain. This was for the best.

[You have taken an ice pill.]

[The attribute overlay effect of the ice pill will increase the attribute damage.]

[200% ice damage is added.]

[The chill of your heart engulfs your entire body.]

I would've never done this in a normal situation. The ice pill was actually a type of poison. Eating just one would make you feel like you were standing naked in the middle of winter.

It meant that I should usually only take one.

[The exclusive skill 'Cold Resistance Lv. 5' has protected you.]

The skill I gained from Yoo Jonghyuk started at level 5.

"Everyone come behind me!"

I shouted as I held the handle of my sword. Perhaps it was due to the memories when I was Yoo Jonghyuk. The feeling I got when I grasped the sword subtly changed.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

Kiiing!

[The special option of Unbroken Faith is activated.]

[The ether property is converted to 'darkness.']

[The effect of the ice pill will add 'frost' to the ether property.]

The ether blade became a dark blue. It was due to the overlay of ice and darkness.

Chwaaaaak!

The dark blue ether blade started to hit the flames. I exploded all my muscle strength and ran to the lesser dragon.

Now it was an all out battle.

[The stigma 'Song of the Sword' has been used.]

[Your sword is filled with the words left by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.]

The buff ability varied according to the verse of the Song of the Sword. Please don't let it be a strange verse.

{In the night, a god appeared in his dream and said, "You will win big if you do this. Otherwise, you will lose."}

I wanted a different verse when different colours appeared on the lesser dragon's body. Most of them were green but there were parts that looked a toxic red.

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' is supporting your battle.]

I realized the meaning of the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare. I see. These were the weak points.

I ran through the fire and swung my sword at the lesser dragon's head. The first point was pale red.

Kyaaaah!

It floundered while I cut the Achilles tendon of its hind legs. The second was dark red.

Kyaaaak!

I jumped to avoid the tail and its paw swung towards me.

Peeeeok!

[The shield effect of the brown flag is activated.]

The flames couldn't be blocked but the shield could endure a few ordinary attacks.

I ran as it roared and stabbed my blade.

Puok!

It was at a red light on its chest.

Kyaaaack!

The lesser dragon started to wince.

The shield of the brown flag was instantly destroyed and flames started to gather at its mouth.

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, 'Lesser Dragon Igneel' is preparing the 'Flames of Destruction'.]

The attack phase was finally starting. Now I had no shield. I used all my magic power and the elongated ether blade struck its chest. I swung and swung again.

The explosive ice damage hit its chest. But it still didn't fall.

Kuaaaaaah!

Just a bit more.

Kyaaaak!

A bit more...

[The 5th grade fire dragon species, 'Lesser Dragon Igneel' is using the 'Flames of Destruction'.]

The flames burned in front of me. I would die once they struck me. I could hear the calls of the party members in the distance. I listened to the calls and swung my sword without backing down.

I could do it. My calculations weren't wrong. I was a 'reader.' If I had been Yoo Jonghyuk...

A sharp sense of emotion came as I wielded the sword in a trance. Yoo Jonghyuk's sword was invisible and silent. The sensation was strongly embedded in me.

I grabbed the hilt with all my strength. I recalled the feeling of that moment with my senses.

At least once. If I could imitate even a bit of that 'one sword.'

Kuoooooh!

The sword moved and I heard something burst. It was the sound of flesh exploding.

The blood of the lesser dragon soaked my eyes and its body parts flew through the air.

After rolling around in the high-temperature dust, I vomited up all the congested parts.

I shook my head to regain my vision. I staggered as I barely got up. I was staring into the lesser dragon's eyes. I was taken aback and shook. It seemed that the burning Flames of Destruction had quietly turned off. The huge eyelids blinked once before it slowly backed away.

Kuuong!

The Blade of Belief was crying out silently from what it was stabbed into the dragon's heart.

[You are the first to kill the disaster 'Lesser Dragon Igneel'.]

[You are the first to contribute to clearing the fifth main scenario.]

[An impossible feat has been accomplished.]

The power slowly went out of my body. There was no power in my clenched fists. I gaped for breath as I sat down.

It was a reckless challenge. This time I really almost died.

[The compensation settlement will take some time due to the impossible achievement.]

[Some low-grade dokkaebi have requested a 'plausibility' request from the Administration Bureau.]

The intermediate dokkaebi was staring down at me quietly.

Anyway, now was the time for sweet rewards.

Chapter 56

First Person Protagonist's Point of View (3)

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' applauds your spirit!]

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' praises your courage!]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' is curious about your tactics.]

.....

[Some constellations are greatly impressed by your performance.]

[20,000 coins have been sponsored.]

I frowned as the indirect messages poured in without a filter. No one disliked praise. However, dozens of praises pouring in at once was too much.

Where did Bihyung go and why didn't he manage the messages? Ah... he would've been called by the Administrator Bureau right now.

There was no compensation for the hidden scenario and the intermediate dokkaebi disappeared without saying something.

By the way, the total number of sponsored coins was 20,000 coins... The 'minority channels' were different from the 'large channels'.

I quickly looked at the fire dragon's body and pulled out the core.

[5th grade Fire Dragon's Core]

A core surrounded by a soft red light. The quality of the core that came out from the disaster was unusual.

It was deteriorated but it was still a dragon. There were many beneficial parts. For example, the bones and leather. It could be processed by a good blacksmith or exchanged.

I looked down at the body of the fire dragon. I had caught a disaster but to only obtain this much...

Then there was a sudden pain from my back as well as a cheerful voice.

“Dokja-ssi, what game character are you?”

I turned around and saw Jung Heewon standing behind me.

A cough came out.

“...My physical state is so bad right now that I will die from one hit from you.”

“You will live even if you are killed.”

“That isn’t necessarily the case.”

I expected Jung Heewon to ask but she was somewhat quiet. I realized that she was greatly shocked when I died.

She seemed to have cried... no, Jung Heewon wasn’t crying. She lowered her voice like she was conscious of the other party members.

“...Did you know this and acted?”

“Not everything...”

“I really thought you were dead!”

“But I survived.”

Once again, her strong palm slapped against my back. Lee Hyunsung came running out late.

“Dokja-ssi! Are you okay?”

“Yes, I’m fine.”

Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob were far away and came together. In fact, I wanted these guys to die here but they were really lucky. Well, they were in my group now so I could control them at any time. But...

Silence fell as everyone stared at me. I sighed and said, “...You can ask one by one. What

are your questions?”

A sudden hearing began.



“Resurrection is a new privilege I have gained. It isn’t due to my sponsor.”

I moderately avoided the difficult information and only told them what I thought they needed to know. Jung Heewon muttered with a dumbfounded expression.

“Resurrection every time you save someone... isn’t this a scam?”

“It is one resurrection per one hundred people but a scam is a scam.”

I honestly admitted it. However, the King of No Killing also had a fatal weakness.

As long as I had this attribute, I couldn’t ‘directly’ take the life of another person.

It wasn’t a problem to injure, oppress or make them unable to fight, but he couldn’t kill them. The King of No Killing would be deprived of his throne when he killed a person.

Of course, I didn’t talk about these things. No good would come from it being known.

“You have to work hard to save people in the future.”

“In some cases, people need to be killed...”

“Don’t worry. I’ll kill them for you.”

Jung Heewon stated in a confident voice.

In fact, I was able to choose the King of No Killing with ease because of Jung Heewon. It was the reason why I raised the Judge of Destruction in the first place.

It wasn’t a big problem to keep the King of No Killing until the middle scenarios, although there might be frustrating moments when playing solo.

As time went by, there would be more fraudulent attributes. I got a good attribute in

the beginning so it would be hard to miss the timing to change it.

“But this is really like a fantasy novel. Now you have all types of abilities...”

Lee Sungkook, Jung Minseob and Lee Hyunsung were watching. I intentionally stared at them. It was a warning to Jung Heewon not to say anything.

She accepted it and Lee Sungkook opened his mouth.

“What did it feel like when you died?”

“...It was terrible of course.”

I wanted to ask why he asked this but Lee Sungkook spoke again in a serious voice. “Honestly, I was a bit scared when I saw you rising alive again.”

“You are scared?”

“Yes. Strictly speaking, your entire body disappeared and was restored. Common sense says that such a thing can’t happened. I don’t know what the principle of this world is but if your existence can be duplicated in the entirety... you might not have been ‘resurrected’ but ‘cloned.’”

He spoke a creepy story in a calm voice. It was something I never thought about...

It reminded me that this guy’s attribute was ‘Hypnotist.’

...Wasn’t he interesting?

Jung Heewon started scolding him, “Have you been watching too many movies?”

“This is an important matter. If there is no continuity between your death and resurrection, there is no guarantee that pre-death Representative-nim is the same person as post-resurrection Representative-nim.”

They were difficult words. Several memories crossed my mind. This brat, was he the one who got offended by the pedantic prologue?

“You have a very quaint idea but... there is no need to worry. I was still conscious after my death. Strictly speaking, it wasn’t a real death.”

“Did you experience a soul state?”

“I don’t know if it can be called a soul but...”

I felt a bit of unease as I talked. Ways of Survival was a world created by the author.

This world became a reality. A world in which the soul wasn’t proven now became a world in which the soul was taken for granted.

In such a world, what was ‘my’ existence? Me, my soul. Did it exist from the beginning? Or was I party of the story that the author made?

I shook my head. Now wasn’t the time to be thinking about this.

“In any case, are the useless questions over?”

“Ah, can I ask one more question?”

“What?”

“Why are you suddenly using honorifics with me and Minseob...”

“My Yoo Jonghyuk concept is over.”

Lee Sungkook made a surprised expression as he belatedly realized.

“Eh, come to think about it...”

I didn’t need to hear his words. The concept of over but their treatment wouldn’t dramatically change. I reached out a hand towards Lee Sungkook.

“Give me your smartphone.”

“Yes?”

“I want a phone.”

Lee Sungkook stuck out his phone. It was a good model. It was better than what I used.

“Can I have this?”

“...Wasn’t the Yoo Jonghyuk concept finished?”

“This is my original concept.”

Lee Sungkook was on the verge of tears.

“Everybody rest. I have to look at something for a while. We will move in 10 minutes. You can also collect the items.”

The party members gathered the items scattered all over the place while I used the smartphone to access the Internet.

I pretended to be unconcerned but I was actually a little nervous.

[The hidden scenario compensation settlement will be delayed.]

[The ‘plausibility’ request is currently underway at the Administration Bureau.]

It was due to these messages.

The plausibility judgment. This was why the coins compensation from the hidden scenario weren’t received.

I wanted to check the relevant parts in Ways of Survival but my smartphone was burned.

It was a mistake that wasn’t like me. This was ominous. What if the mail sent by the author was erased...?

At this moment, a message appeared on the screen of my smartphone.

[Synching to a new device is available.]

[Do you still want to proceed with the sync?]

...What is this?

I pressed OK, the download of the file proceeded and a new file was created on the background screen.

[Three Ways to Survive in a Ruined World.TXT]

I see. There was this. Indeed, a file that couldn't be read by the dokkaebis or constellations couldn't disappear so easily.

I looked at Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob collecting the items. I suddenly wondered. Would they be able to read this? Still... I should be careful as possible.

I opened up Ways of Survival and started to read.

[Your reading speed has increased due to the effect of the exclusive attribute.]

I found the 'plausibility' request that took place during Yoo Jonghyuk's 6th regression.

The intermediate dokkaebi of the Seoul Bureau 'Baram' frowned upon reading the scenario in front of him. *(TL: Baram=Wind)*

The top of the document had the name 'Regressor Yoo Jonghyuk.'

'A regressor... damn. The dokkaebis and constellations noticed quickly...'

Baram looked over at the dokkaebis. No senior dokkaebis or great dokkaebis could be seen.

It was natural. This was a 'plausibility request' that occurred at the level of a local dome. The principle was that the world of the district should be solved in the district. Baram asked the nervous looking dokkaebis.

"Who petitioned the bureau?"

"Aooni of Japan."

"Why is he worrying about a foreigner instead of his own country? Doesn't he have any business?"

"There is a lot of fierce fighting between the low grade dokkaebis these days..."

Baram frowned.

Certainly, according to the report, it was worth doing a plausibility request for 'Yoo Jonghyuk.'

There was also a lot of important information that was automatically filtered from the beginning.

In addition, the skill Sage's Eyes meant that some items couldn't be accessed by the system. The data survey required the help of a higher level administration.

Baram sighed and covered up the report.

"It's okay. This guy is someone who has received permission from my superiors. Leave him alone."

"Is it okay? The aftermath..."

"He has a sponsor that we can't afford to go against."

"We can't go against a single constellation? What if the constellation alliance..."

Baram laughed.

"How can you lecture me? Do you know who his sponsor is?"

"T-That's not it."

"It will soon be the fifth scenario so take care of it. The plausibility will be gradually offset as the scenario progresses."

The atmosphere suddenly became cold and he said to the intermediate dokkaebi.

"Don't you have work to do these days?"

"Uh...!"

"Why do sales in the United States and India look like this? Isn't there the prophet in the US and the constellation alliance in India? Why are the sales like this when they are so many rich targets? Are you not making the products well?"

"T-That..."

"Shit, don't give excuses! Quickly sell the coin goods!"

A laugh emerged. I was reminded of Minosoft when looking at the dokkaebis working. The planning division wasn't a joke.

In any case, I was now in a situation similar to Yoo Jonghyuk in Ways of Survival. I thought that this would happen someday but... this was why it wasn't good to be noticed.

This... what if the judgment caused me damages?

At that moment, a trembling voice was heard in the air.

[How many times do I have to be called to the Bureau because of you...]

Bihyung. I opened the dokkaebi communication.

"How did it go?"

Chapter 57

First Person Protagonist's Point of View (4)

[What is happening? Things have turned completely upside down. What skills do you have? Why can't I access the information even when I ask the Supervisory Bureau?]

I was curious as well. I also wanted to see my attributes window.

'So what happened? Am I going to be penalized?'

[Where did you hear that? Hey, do you know how hard I defended you? Administrator, please listen to me. Kim Dokja isn't a scammer or a strange person! He is just a very hard worker!]

He speak in a convincing manner.

[Fortunately, my earnest appeal was taken into consideration. I've analyzed the entire scenario and found that you only used a few skills. It isn't enough to destroy the ecology of the scenarios.]

It was as I expected. I didn't learn passive skills for no reason. The more good skills I used, the easier it was to attract the attention of the Bureau.

[Besides, there are some loud guys in other areas... the Bureau is busy right now.]

'Then it worked out well?'

[In fact, there are a few jerks... but instructions came down from the upper management and the 'great dokkaebi' said to dismiss it.]

I was amazed by the unexpected words. The great dokkaebi interfered?

[Sigh... listen to the intermediate dokkaebi. I shouldn't be here. There are suddenly more eyes on me. You should be careful. This is the jurisdiction of the intermediate dokkaebi and he has a firm grudge against you.]

‘Grudge?’

[Don’t you know. The plausibility meeting is like a tax investigation. In any case... you will have a hard time for a while.]

Bihyung disappeared. Then there was a huge spark in the air and the intermediate dokkaebi showed up in a formal suit. He looked around for a while before speaking in a gruff voice.

[...I’m sorry everyone. There was a bit of friction and the compensation was late. It is late but I will now reward you.]

[3,000 coins have been acquired for clearing the hidden scenario.]

[You have earned 15,000 coins as compensation for killing the 5th grade fire dragon.]

[You have obtained the ‘Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar’ for being the first to prevent a disaster.]

[In the future, you will get the favour of the Imyuntar people.]

Fortunately, the compensation was paid normally. In addition, the Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar. Now that I got this, the upcoming fifth scenario wouldn’t be so bad.

It wasn’t as much as what I got but the faces of the other party members were hilarious once they received a clear reward.

By the way... stingy bastards. I caught a disaster and these were the only rewards?

Then the intermediate dokkaebi started talking.

[By the way, you worked so hard that there was a bit of a problem with the scenario.]

There was something sarcastic and ominous about his tone.

[As a result of discussions with the Bureau, it was reported that the average skill of the local incarnations doesn’t match the difficulty of the scenario. Therefore, I have arbitrarily adjusted the difficulty level in my area using my own judgment.]

...What? A random adjustment?

[The time limit of the fourth scenario has been significantly reduced.]

The mouth of the intermediate dokkaebi curved up strangely as he looked at me.

...No, this bastard?

[There are 48 hours left until the end of the fourth scenario.]

[All group representatives and members who haven't taken over the target within the next 48 hours will die.]

Yes... this was what he was planning? Jung Minseob stared at me from where he was picking up the fallen items. Everyone had probably heard the message.

"Who has Changsin Station now?"

"T-The Tyrant King."

One of the seven kings of Seoul, the Tyrant King...

I said with a sigh, "Then let's return to Chungmuro."

By the way, I didn't know if Yoo Jonghyuk was doing well or not. Let's wrap up the fourth scenario.



The distance from Anguk Station to Chungmuro was further than I thought. During the journey, we exchanged a few stories.

Jung Heewon and Lee Hyunsung walked ahead, while I walked in the rear with Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob.

I couldn't take the entire body of the fire dragon so I put half of it on the exchange. The other half was also placed on the exchange, but I deliberately put it at a ridiculously high price. It wasn't for sale but a trick to use the exchange as a warehouse substitute. Bihyung grumbled but I ignored it. Jung Minseob opened his mouth.

"By the way, Representative-nim."

It felt strange because I really felt like a big company's president when I kept being called 'Representative-nim.'

“Is your name Kim Dokja?”

“Yes.”

“Ah... it really is your name...”

“Is it unusual?”

“...Yes. Honestly, you are more like a prophet than we are.”

His voice was rather subdued.

“Sigh... if only I hadn’t stopped reading...”

It was a belated regret. At this moment, I had a moment of doubt. There was something I wanted to ask but I had forgotten.

“Jung Minseob-ssi, I want to ask you something.”

“Yes.”

“How did the prophets gather so quickly?”

This was a point that I always found strange. It hadn’t been more than a month since the initial scenario started. However, these guys had already been working as a group.

Furthermore, the apostles were even worse. Based on the first person protagonist’s point of view, they had a fairly high armed force that couldn’t be obtained without occupying a large number of stations.

It was a growth that couldn’t be understood with my common sense.

“There was someone who called us together.”

“Called you together?”

“Yes. Soon after the first scenario ended, he came to the station where I was.”

Interesting. How was this possible? At that point, there would still be a barrier between stations.

“He introduced himself as an apostle and said that he had read the great Book of Revelations. He recruited prophets to follow him. The odd thing was that it happened simultaneously in different stations. It is hard to believe it was done by one person...”

“In any case, we gathered because of that apostle. He pulled us into the group.”

“Yes, we call that apostle the 1st Apostle.”

“Is he the king of the prophets? The person who hates being called someone who ‘got off’?”

“Ah... you already know. Yes. He likes to be called another name.”

Another name?

“He claims to be a ‘true reader.’”

...What?

“There was a lot of talk about why he would call himself such a name. We couldn’t come to a conclusion. He claimed to have read all of the Book of Revelations but...”

As the story continued, this person’s identity became more and more doubtful. When I thought about the information he took advantage of, he didn’t seem like a ‘reader’...

I was busy thinking when Chungmuro approached. It hadn’t been long since I left but I felt like I had returned to my hometown as I took in the air of Chungmuro Station.

I restrained my companions from entering the station.

“Wait a minute.”

Thinking about it, I was still naked. Why hadn’t anyone said anything?

I spoke to Lee Sungkook. “Lee Sungkook-ssi, please take off your pants.”

I took the lead to enter Chungmuro Station, while Lee Sungkook was forced to walk behind me in his underwear.

I could see Yoo Sangah welcoming me in the distance. I looked into her moist eyes and

could see how hard it had been.

Something ran into me and I saw Lee Gilyoung attached to my right leg.

“Have you been well?”

The dusty Lee Gilyoung nodded.

Lee Jihye had a serious injury and hadn’t woken up yet. Gong Pildu scoffed and turned his head as soon as he saw me.

[The constellation ‘Defense Master’ reproaches you on your late return.]

It was a reaction I could understand since his incarnation nearly died.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi!”

Lee Hyunsung and Jung Heewon didn’t know what happened in Chungmuro and ran towards the people with an aghast expression. People around the platform were bleeding. In fact, Yoo Sangah had a cloth bound tightly to her shoulder.

Some of the railroad tracks were covered with blood. They were traces of a fierce fight. Jung Minseob stuttered, “T-The apostles?”

The heads of number 2, 3, 4 and 7 were lined up side by side on the railroad tracks. Their expressions seemed like they didn’t realize their own death. I knew who was this skillful.

I asked Lee Gilyoung.

“Where is Yoo Jonghyuk?”

As I spoke, I felt an ominous presence from the Hoehyeong tunnel side. I knew despite the distance. Our arrogant and dignified hero practiced the Alone Under Heaven and Earth scripture.

“Yoo Jonghyuk?”

He looked at me with no change in his expression. I thought he would say something about what happened in the Theatre Dungeon... but what was this?

The cut off head of a person was still being held in his hands. Someone screamed while Yoo Jonghyuk threw the head this way.

The head rolling like a toy was covered with a cloak with '1' on it. It was the 1st Apostle.

Yoo Jonghyuk was really great. He chased this guy to the end and killed him.

I was half relieved and half anxious. I still had questions but if the apostle died like this...

At this moment, something ridiculous happened.

"It is you! You screwed up my plan! Right?"

The severed head suddenly started talking to me.

"Waaack! What?" Jung Minseob screamed and fell over.

The eyes looked up at me while he smiled smugly. It was impossible.

The skills that could be used even when the head was cut off was extremely rare even in Ways of Survival. It was possible if he used the skill Immortal Delay but even with that skill, he couldn't stay in a state with his head cut off.

Besides, there was no blood from the cut neck...

Wait. Perhaps?

The information that I received from Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob started to run through my head.

A man who revealed himself to all prophets and claimed to be a 'true reader.' He appeared all over Seoul as soon as the scenario began and gathered people. In addition, it was possible to pass through the barriers, he didn't die when his head was cut and there was no blood...

"The Avatar ability..."

I was certain. The guy in front of me was a fake.

The severed head continued to speak.

“Wow, I am really impressed. Pretending to be Yoo Jonghyuk, beating the apostles and the dragon... What is your identity?”

I see. This guy didn't know my identity?

“What are you?”

As far as I knew, there were very few people who could use the 'Avatar' ability in Ways of Survival.

The occupation that received such an attribute was normally fixed. They were occupations engaged in creative work and frequently experienced dissociative personality disorder due to excessive stress.

I slowly looked him up and down before asking, “You, are you perhaps a writer?”

Chapter 58

First Person Protagonist's Point of View (5)

Writer. It was one of the few occupations in Ways of Survival that could give the Avatar ability.

Some of his strange miracles would be explained if he was a writer.

The lips of the 1st Apostle subtly twisted.

"Writer... do you mean the creator of the Book of Revelations? You have found out. That's right, I wrote the Book of Revelations."

I didn't mean this but this bastard was suddenly talking nonsense. For me, it was a truth that wasn't possible. I looked towards Yoo Jonghyuk.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint has been activated!]
[The character Yoo Jonghyuk is currently using Lie Detection Lv. 6.]

I knew it. He was a meticulous jerk. I asked once again, "You wrote the Book of Revelations?"

"Yes. At the same time, I am also the sole owner of the Book of Revelations."

A confident laugh emerged. Really? Let's challenge it once.

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' has used 'Lie Detection Lv. 6'.]
[The character Yoo Jonghyuk has confirmed that the statement is true.]

...What? This guy was telling the truth? I suddenly panicked and my circuits got tangled up. It wasn't possible no matter how I thought about it.

I hid my confusion and asked again, "What exactly is the 'revelation' you are talking about?"

"Why are you asking when you already know? A great epic about the future."

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk has confirmed that the statement is true.]

...Strange. There was some truth about it?

“Now it is your turn. How did you know about the plan of me and the apostles? Are you also an apostle?”

“You wrote the Book of Revelations yourself? Then shouldn’t you know?”

“It is fun to be an omniscient creator?”

He giggled like a leisurely villain while I regained my composure. No matter how I looked, he wasn’t the author of Ways of Survival.

If he was really the writer of Ways of Survival, there was no way he wouldn’t know that he gave me a text version.

“By the way, it is interesting. I thought the woman in Seodaemun Prison would be the last apostle but a man like you was hiding...”

“...Seodaemun prison?”

“Hmm, you don’t know yet? Let’s trade. Reveal your true identity. Then I will give you some information.”

“Let’s see? I don’t think you have information that I want.”

“I might’ve been overpowered but this isn’t my real body. You were a bit lucky...”

“I know information about the future.”

I deliberately interrupted him. Now was the time to sprinkle a bit of spice for Yoo Jonghyuk.

“In addition, I know much more than you.”

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk has confirmed that your words are true.]

The expression of the 1st Apostle stiffened.

“You’re barking nonsense. I know more than you...”

At this moment, something flashed in his eyes.

“Wait a minute, perhaps?”

The moment he realized something, I also noticed something. This guy, was it ‘him’? Right now, there were five truths that I knew.

One, he had read Ways of Survival. Two, his occupation was a ‘writer.’ Three, he wasn’t the writer who wrote Ways of Survival. Four, he wrote a ‘text’ that told the future. Five, his knowledge was only ‘somewhat’ accurate.

I read through 3,149 chapters of Ways of Survival.

As far as I knew, Ways of Survival wasn’t popular and there was no illegal text version. But if he was the guy that I thought... it would be understandable if this guy had a ‘text’ version and knew a lot about Ways of Survival.

I opened my mouth.

“Do you like to live while copying others?”

“W-What?”

His eyes were shaken. There was no doubt. The 1st Apostle was him.

“I didn’t think you would live like this. The revelation... Do you want to live like this? My teeth starts grinding together when I think about your claims of being the creator of the Book of Revelations.”

“What...?”

“It is somewhat strange. The information that you have used is meager.”

The guy paled.

“Isn’t it time to stop acting like this? Are you still doing it despite the world becoming like this?”

“Yoo Jonghyuk!”

The guy hurriedly looked at Yoo Jonghyuk.

“Yoo Jonghyuk! Work with me!”

He was silly.

“As I said before, I know all of the revelations. Only I can take you to the end of this road in this world!”

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 2 has been activated!]

[Due to high fatigue, you are unable to activate Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 2.]

Damn, right now?

“Think carefully! You can’t break through the 46th scenario alone. You have to hold hands with me to defeat Anna Croft and the Chalatustra!”

This jerk was speaking the same words I did. Yoo Jonghyuk shook his head.

“I have never heard of the revelations.”

“It is like a prophecy! Can’t you see my attribute? It even says that I am the ‘last’!”

[The character ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ has used Sage’s Eyes Lv. 8!]

I also activated the skill.

[The information of this person can’t be read in ‘Character List.’]

[This person isn’t registered in ‘Character List.’]

Damn, I couldn’t see it. Yoo Jonghyuk verified something with Sage’s Eyes and looked at me. The severed head continued to speak.

“Kill him! You should know that he is dangerous. He pretended to be you and will seriously damage you in the future. If you leave him alone, he will cause a serious butterfly effect and ruin all your plans!”

I was outraged. Did this jerk want to die together with me?

“...Isn’t it the same for you?”

‘I am different! Yoo Jonghyuk, hold hands with me. I will give you a vow or whatever you want! I will never betray you!’

He came out strongly. Yoo Jonghyuk watched the situation and opened his mouth.

“I see. Joining hands...”

Life started to creep into Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes as he looked at me. I couldn’t inside his mind so I was going crazy. Yoo Jonghyuk slowly moved his sword towards me. The 1st Apostle’s momentum rose as he shouted.

“Go ahead and kill him! Kill him!”

“One is a prophet and one is a revelator...”

“Kill him!”

Peok! Yoo Jonghyuk trampled on the head of the 1st Apostle.

“Kuk... what?”

“If you really know the future then let me ask you one thing.”

“What?”

The blade moved to my neck. The ‘One Sword’ that I experienced through Yoo Jonghyuk was now heading towards me. I felt a sting and something warm flowed down my neck.

“Hey! What are you doing?”

The surprised Jung Heewon ran towards this side. I raised my hand and restrained the party. I was nervous but it wasn’t good to stimulate Yoo Jonghyuk here.

Yoo Jonghyuk asked the 1st Apostle.

“I will ask you. Will I kill this guy now or not?”

“What?”

“If you have really received a revelation of the future, you will know my choice.”

...This bastard had a bad habit. He was doing this again?

The face of the 1st Apostle looked agonized. Maybe I was the same on the ‘Even Bridge.’ Surprisingly, the answer came quickly.

“Of course you will kill him! You must do it!”

It was a face full of strong convictions. His face was arrogantly assured that Yoo Jonghyuk would act like this.

“Come on, kill him! And...!”

The sword moved. But what followed wasn’t the sound of flesh being cut.

Kwajik!

The head of the 1st Apostle burst as it was stepped on.

The person wouldn’t die because it was an avatar, but he would suffer considerable psychological damage.

Yoo Jonghyuk’s sword was soon removed.

“He was a mouthy bastard.”

I was a bit stunned. Yoo Jonghyuk chose to spare me? I felt a bit shaken. I wasn’t sure...

Yoo Jonghyuk stared at me for a moment before walking away.

“Hey! Where are you going?”

This jerk, he must think he was so cool.

...Honestly, he was a bit cool.

“Just wait! Are you going to leave with Lee Jihye?”

“Since the future has changed, the plan has also changed.”

“Why don’t you act together with me? I can help you.”

Yoo Jonghyuk turned towards me. I reflexively shrank back at his eyes.

“The debt is paid off. My last favour is not taking away your flag.”

This bastard? But I couldn’t retreat like this.

“In any case, you can’t leave the station unless I remove you from the group. Do you want to receive the punishment?”

Yoo Jonghyuk slowly moved his hand towards the hilt of his sword. I quickly added.

“I know what your plan is. Aren’t you going towards Jung-gu? It is your goal to complete the black flag by walking the King’s Road. I will help you.”

“I would rather take your flag right now.”

“Then try it. Is your sword faster or my tongue faster?”

It was a gamble. Yoo Jonghyuk could stab my neck before the effect of the punishment appeared.

“You don’t need to go towards Jung-gu. Go to the north. The territory of the Tyrant King will be yours and it will help you make your grand flag. Getting a flag and removing the enemy, isn’t it killing two birds with one stone?”

“I can do it myself.”

“There are 48 hours left until the end of the fourth scenario. Can you occupy 20 stations and complete the black flag in that time?”

Yoo Jonghyuk’s hands hesitated. He was caught.

“Besides... don’t you have a reason for going north? Surely you aren’t going to throw away your family member at this time?”

“...You.”

“Remain calm. I am speaking in good faith. I really will help.”

Yoo Jonghyuk’s angry eyes stared at me for a moment. The atmosphere was strained. The killing intent soon disappeared.

“There is no such thing as anything free in the world. What are your conditions?”

As expected, the regressor was quick to notice. I said with a smile, “It is simple. Let me know just one thing. My condition is that simple.”

“What is it?”

“That guy you just stepped on, what is his attribute? One would be the ‘last to get off.’ What is the other one?”

After a while, Yoo Jonghyuk opened his mouth.

◇ ◇ ◇

10 minutes afterwards, I called Jung Minseob and Lee Sungkook. It was a separate matter for the two of them. Before I could open my mouth, Jung Minseob asked me first.

“In the end, what was that guy?”

I hesitated for a moment before asking.

“Do you know the novel ‘SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor’?”

“Ah, I read it!”

Lee Sungkook raised his hand.

“Wasn’t it the number one platinum novel on Textpia? It was really fun...”

“Ah, that’s right. I had forgotten but now it rings a bell. How did it finish?”

The two of them started speaking loudly as memories popped up. As expected, these

guys must be interested in web novels if they read Ways of Survival.

“There were all types of elements but... it was still fun.”

In fact, I read that novel. I was reading Ways of Survival and accidentally clicked on it since it was on the ‘Today’s Best’ list. Then I was surprised to see the development and setting of the novel.

–*An infinite regressor psychopath.*

–*Sponsorship from transcendent beings.*

–*Streaming system.*

–*A survival game with absurd missions.*

In fact, these were common settings. The problem was the details of the common settings and the way they were combined. I had left a comment as soon as I read it.

–*Isn’t this plagiarizing Ways of Survival?*

I remembered. Rather than a plagiarism controversy, I was criticized for comparing it to a bad novel.

I received terrible messages from the readers of SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor.

–*Isn’t your business over there? Stop causing inconveniences* ㄹ ㄹ

I was furious and even sent a note to the writer of Ways of Survival. Then the author said something. He was in a better mood because the number of views had increased. I teared up because I thought the author was pitiful.

Lee Sungkook asked, “But why are you talking about this novel?”

“The 1st Apostle is the author of SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor.”

“Huh? It can’t be.”

That author would know Ways of Survival.

Now that the world had turned into the novel, a writer who plagiarized the novel could claim copyrights on this world. In addition, he added the absurd setting of the ‘revelation.’

After some explanations, Jung Minseob understood and made an absurd expression.

“It was a plagiarized novel?”

“Yes.”

“Come to think of it, the novel was similar... I can’t remember well because it is old... why didn’t that novel pop up first in my mind? I was much more famous.”

“Is it due to the attribute? Only the portion we read popped up. The ‘SS’ part is also confusing because there are too many novels with them.”

“Is that so? In any case, the 1st Apostle is a plagiarist? Then he will have a text version...”

I nodded and said.

“Maybe he has a copy of his own plagiarized work. He copied the plot of the original so he can see the future of this world to a certain extent.”

It was painful when thinking that a plagiarist was successful even in this changed world. It was time to implement justice.

“Then isn’t it impossible to win against him? If he copied the original to the end...”

“It isn’t to the end. He only copied the early parts. He would stop early to prevent a plagiarism controversy later on. After a bit more time, the information he knows will decrease.

“How do you know this?”

“I just know.”

It was natural. In the chapters in the 100s, I was the only reader of Ways of Survival.

“Excuse me, how far did Representative-nim read in the original work...?”

“Before that, there is something you have to do. To be exact, it is something we have to do together.”

Their shoulders stiffened.

“Didn’t you tell me before? The prophets were hit by the Tyrant King.”

“Ah... maybe there are still a few people being used by him.

“Really? Then it is better.”

“Yes?”

The time remaining until the scenario ended was 48 hours. It was hard to do it alone if I wanted to hunt the Tyrant King.

“I will disturb the information of these guys.”

If the Tyrant King was using the prophets, I could take advantage of it.

“Reveal part of the revelations.”

“Huh? How...?”

They still didn’t understand what I was talking about so I kindly explained.

“From now on, we will make a text of SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor and spread it.”

If there were several enemies, the answer was to make them fight against each other.



PDF by: traitor#ZEN